Sayat`-Nova:
Within the Near Eastern bardic tradition and posthumous

A dissertation submitted in partial satisfaction of the requirements of the degree Doctor of Philosophy in Near Eastern Languages and Cultures

by

Xi Yang

2016
ABSTRACT OF THE DISSERTATION

Sayat’-Nova:
Within the Near Eastern bardic tradition and posthumous

by

Xi Yang
Doctor of Philosophy in Near Eastern Languages and Cultures
University of California, Los Angeles, 2016
Professor Peter S. Cowe, Chair

AšuƗ/aşık/aşıq (from the Arabic ʿāšiq, or lover) is a skilled bard's composite performing art--a unity of prose narrations, songs, instrumental accompaniment, and appropriate gesture. Of sixteenth-century Turkic origin, the art spread over a vast area covering modern Turkey, Georgia, Armenia, Azerbaijan, Iran, and further. In the mid-eighteenth century Sayat’-Nova, the best-known Armenian ašuf, was active in Tiflis (modern Tbilisi), the capital of Eastern Georgia. His songs were written in at least three languages--Armenian, Georgian and Azerbaijani--and won praise for their ardent emotion and artistic perfection. But despite his importance in Near Eastern culture, two issues in Sayat’-Nova studies have rarely been studied. First, fully appreciating Sayat’-Nova requires contextualizing his work within the developing
Armenian aşuƗ tradition and the international aşuƗ/aşık/aşıq tradition in the Near East.

Second, the history of Sayat’-Nova studies as a field and its growing popularity in relation to twentieth-century Armenian nationalism and Soviet cultural policies demands attention as well.

Focusing on these neglected issues will enable a richer understanding of Sayat’-Nova's place in the history of the aşuƗ/aşık/aşıq tradition as well as his relation to the elevated poetic traditions in South Caucasia, the Armenian aşuİs’ contribution within the broader matrix of the early modern Turkic aşık/aşıq tradition, and the evolution of a distinct aşuƗ tradition in the Armenian language. At the same time, exploring his posthumous adoption as a cultural icon will provide insight into the history of scholarship and of mass culture both in South Caucasia and for Armenians worldwide.
The dissertation of Xi Yang is approved.

Dominico Ingenito

Münir Beken

Peter S. Cowe, Committee Chair

University of California, Los Angeles

2016
Table of Contents

Explanation of terminology and the principles of transcription employed in this study .............................................................. vi

Acknowledgements .............................................................................................................................................................................. x

Vita ........................................................................................................................................................................................................ xiii

Introduction .................................................................................................................................................................................. 1

Chapter Breakdown ........................................................................................................................................................................ 6

Chapter 1 .................................................................................................................................................................................. 13

Chapter 2 .................................................................................................................................................................................. 41

Chapter 3 .................................................................................................................................................................................. 123

Chapter 4 .................................................................................................................................................................................. 163

Chapter 5 .................................................................................................................................................................................. 204

Chapter 6 .................................................................................................................................................................................. 234

Epilogue .................................................................................................................................................................................. 279

Appendices .............................................................................................................................................................................. 282

Bibliography .............................................................................................................................................................................. 287
Explanation of terminology and the principles of transcription employed in this study

A. Terminology

1. The aşul/aşık/aşıq tradition is essentially a type of bardic composition and performance widespread in the Near East from the sixteenth century onwards. This triple designation relates to the form of the term current in the three major languages in which it was disseminated, Armenian, Turkish, and Azeri. As a result, whenever the context is clear, it will be referred to as “bardic tradition” and the exponent as “bard” instead of “aşul/aşık/aşıq”. In most cases the term ašul/aşık/aşıq will be individualized to refer purely to ethnic Armenian/Turkish/Azərbaycan bards respectively.

2. The same considerations apply to related terms like davt`ar/defter/dəftər illustrating the variant forms in the three above languages to denote the notebook in which the bard or an associate inscribed the text of his songs, the triple term would be abbreviated such as “bardic notebook” whenever possible.

3. In this dissertation the terms Azerbaijan/Azərbaycan/Azər is used without any political implications. “Azerbaijan” refers to both the territory of the current Republic of Azerbaijan (called “Tartary” in Russian in the nineteenth century) as well as the region in the Northwest of Iran, which bears this name from ancient times. “Azerbaijani” as a noun refers to the Turkic inhabitants of both territories mentioned above in addition to those Turkic inhabitants who used to live, or still live in the Republic of Armenia and the mostly eastern and southern parts of the
Republic of Georgia, which belonged to the Persian Empire in the early modern period, since from Russian Imperial times onward these people are identified as “Azerbaijanis”. As an adjective, “Azerbaijani” pertains to the Azerbaijanis. “Azeri” refers to the Turkic language spoken by the “Azerbaijanis” as defined above.

4. In the context of the early modern period, the toponym Armenia refers to the area of historical Armenia on the Armenian Plateau. From 1918 to the present it refers to the Republic of Armenia, regardless of its political affiliation.

5. The term Armeno-Turkish ašuƗ refers to those ethnic Armenian ašuƗs who composed in a Turkic language or dialect.

6. Armeno-Azeri refers to the convention of Armenian ašuƗs, all of whom till now lived in the former Iranian sphere, of employing the Armenian script to render their Turkic compositions, where the dialect shows more affinity with modern literary Azeri than modern standard Turkish. For example, it is appropriate to refer to Sayat’-Nova’s Turkic songs as being recorded in this script. This designation is preferable to classifying such songs as “Turkish” or “Armeno-Turkish”, since the orthography of these songs reflects the local Azeri dialect.

B. Principles of Transliteration

Where toponyms have a widely accepted English form that will be followed. Therefore “Yerevan” is preferred over “Erevan”, “Moscow” over “Moskva”, “Tehran” over “Tihrān”, etc.

For Armenian, Georgian, Russian, and Ukrainian the Library of Congress system of transliteration is followed with the following exceptions:
1. Monographs on Armenian Studies published in Western languages are cited according to their existing Romanized versions. Similarly, where authors have a preferred spelling of their names in Latin script, those are retained.

2. Transliteration of book titles or quotations follow the orthography of the original printed form. The names of authors from Soviet and post-Soviet countries are uniformly transliterated according to the reformed orthography. Therefore, “Hovhannes T’umanyan” will appear instead of “Yovhannēs T’umanean”.

3. Exceptions to principles 1 and 2:

A. The name of the focal figure of this dissertation is uniformly spelled as Sayat’- Nova in the main text outside of quotations.

B. The famous Soviet Armenian film director’s name will be spelled uniformly as Sergei Parajanov as has become accepted in English.

C. As explained in chapter 2, keeping a davt’ar/defter/dəftər, or hand-written notebook of songs, is the common practice for bards. To distinguish Sayat’- Nova’s songbook it appears as Davt’ar with initial capital.

In Russian transliteration, for the sake of simplicity, the ligature tie above two-letter tie

---

1 There was an orthographical reform in Soviet Armenia in 1922, and its revision in 1940. It seems that the major purpose for the reform was its “colloquialization” at the cost of classical, etymological spellings. Therefore, letters ē and ā were abolished, substituted by e and o as monophthongs; or as diphthongs ēa, ēo and āi, substituted by eya, eyo and eyi. Letters e and o, when pronounced as ye and vo at the initial position, were written as ye and vo. Diphthongs ea and eo were replaced by ya and yo. Diphthong ow is reserved only for vowel u; while its pronunciation as v was replaced by the monophthong v. Diphthong oy was replaced by uy, unchanged only when it was pronounced as oy. The initial y was replaced by h wherever it is pronounced as h; while the final silent y was abolished. The 1940 revision can be regarded as a partial retreat from the 1922 reform, in which ē and ā were reintroduced in the initial position (including etymologically initial position) and a few words; initial ye and vo were again written as e and o; and glide y was only written across morpheme boundary with a/o and i, particularly in inflection. See: Jasmine Dum-Tragut: *Armenian. Modern Eastern Armenian*, London Oriental and African Language Library, vol. 14, John Benjamins Publishing Company, Amsterdam/Philadelphia, 2009, p. 12.
characters is omitted.

Transliterations of Arabic, Persian, and Ottoman follow the system of the *International Journal of Middle East Studies* (IJMES).
Acknowledgements

First and foremost, my gratitude goes to my advisor, Prof. Peter S. Cowe, who decided this topic from the first talk I ever held with him in person. In the coming years, his erudity and reserveless help greatly facilitate my study and life in UCLA, Los Angeles.

After him, I should thank all the other committee members who have worked with me: Asst. Prof. Dominico Ingenito from the Department of Near Eastern Languages and Cultures and Prof. Münir Beken from the Department of Ethnomusicology, the other two reading members in the committee, greatly help me with their respective specialities: Persian and Ottoman literatures, and Turkish music. The latter has also introduced me to a number of Turkish and Azerbaijani scholars, whom would be appreciated later. Prof. Yona Sabar and Prof. Mohammed Rahim Shayegan were the members other than Prof. Cowe participating my prospectus defence. Prof. Sabar helped me with his early experience in the Near East; while with Prof. Shayegan I passed my qualifying exam on Persian literature. It is a great pity that Prof. Hossein Ziai, the former member on Iranian-oriented issues, passed away too early to see the complement of this dissertation.

Besides my committee members, I should also thank other professors in NELC who have helped me: Prof. Michael D. Cooperson and Prof. Susan Slyomovics from the Arabic track; Prof. Anahid Keshishian, lecturer of Eastern Armenian; Prof. Hagop Kouloujian, lectuer of Western Armenian; Prof. Güliz Kuruoğlu, retired lecturer of
Turkish, and Prof. Emer. Ralph Jaeckel, Senior Lecturer Emeritus of Turkic. All the persons listed above have answered a number of my questions during my dissertation writing.

After members of UCLA, I have also been helped by some other scholars based in the United States. An incomplete list of them includes: Prof. Dwight F. Reynolds, specialized in Arabic language and literature, UCSB; Prof. Walter Zev Feldman, specialized in Ottoman Turkish and Jewish music, currently associated with NYU Abu Dhabi; Prof. Julie Scott Meisami, specialized in Persian literature, now living in California; Asst. Prof. Selim Kuru, Chair of the Department of NELC, University of Washington, and Dr. James Steffen, Film and Media Librarian in Woodruff Library. All these professors have answered my questions, mostly by email.

Next is an even more inconclusive list of scholars from the countries where the bardic tradition exists or used to exist. Armenia: Henrik Baxë`inyan and Arcvi Baxë`inyan, T`ovma Polosyan, Hasmik Step`anyan, Levon Abrahamyan, Vač`e Šarafyan. Azerbaijan: Altay Goyuşov, Zümrüd Dadaşzadǝ and Kamila Dadaşzadǝ, Məhərrəm Qasımlı, Azad Nəbiyev, Qara Namazov. Georgia: Zaza Alek`siże and Nikoloz Alek`siže, Merab Gağaniže. Turkey: Recep Uslu, Volkan Kaya, Serkan Şenel, Süleyman Şenel. Through the help of all above, I acquired much material difficult to access outside of their own countries and much insight from the participants of contemporary events.

I should also express my gratitude to librarians in various libraries, though in most cases their names are still unknown for me: UCLA libraries, National Library of

The completion of my study in UCLA and this dissertation owes much to China Scholarship Council, the institution that has funded me for the first four years of my study in UCLA with the CSC Scholarship. Last but not least, I have to thank my family for all their financial and mental support for me all these years.
Vita

Name of Author: Xi Yang

Degrees Awarded:

BA: English Language and Literature, China Foreign Affairs University, July 2005

MA: Middle Iranian Languages and Culture, Peking University, July 2008

Honors and Awards:

China Scholarship Council Scholarship, 2009-2013

Euru/Duke Grants (CEES Language Study Grant), 2010

SF/KAREKIN DER AVEDISIAN/STIPEND, 2010-2011, 2011-2012

Dissertation Year Fellowship, 2014


Professional Experience:

Calouste Gulbenkian Foudation China Program, 2014-2015

Professional Publications:

“Some possible Chinese records about Armenia and the Armenians in mid-Qing dynasty”, Iran and the Caucasus, Volume 13, Number 2, Brill, Leiden, 2009, pp. 229-237
INTRODUCTION

Over the past century and a half scholarship on Sayat’-Nova has significantly advanced our knowledge of the bard and his life and works. These advances include defining the elusive beauty in his songs who led to his downfall from court as Princess Anna, sister of King Erekle II. Similarly, many characteristic features of his compositional mode have been isolated, such as formal multiplicity, innovative tropes, and the deep sincerity of emotion expressed in his songs. Nevertheless, taken as a whole, studies to date appear impressionistic in their conclusions and are marked by a lack of comprehensiveness in methodology and coverage, which inevitably raises questions about the accuracy of their results.

One of the most serious theoretical gaps is the widespread lack of a systematic definition of what constitutes bardic literature and lends it its integrity as a distinct genre clearly distinguished from folksong at one extreme and elite types of poetry on the other. As indicated in the following literature review, studies in both the former Soviet Union and Turkey tend to subsume bardic compositions under the general rubric of folk literature. However, they differ essentially from genres like folksong, riddles, and folk tales according to a number of categories. Though bardic songs are composed in a rather colloquial register, this should be distinguished from the dialectal forms typical of folklore. In most cases, they are the product of professionally trained bards, who usually inscribe them in their notebooks (daftar in Persian, borrowed directly into Turkish as defter) in contrast to genres of folk literature, which are orally composed and
transmitted and continually evolve within untrained collectives, thus lacking any specific authorship. Similarly, with regard to audience, bardic songs are normally performed in urban environments, sometimes in an ambience of high social status, while folksongs derive from a village setting in which most of those present participate in some fashion. It is also important to differentiate bardic compositions from works of elite literature, which also constitutes a distinct tradition whose parameters must be respected. Unfortunately, these issues have not received sufficient attention in bardic studies in general and even less in the case of Sayat'Nova.¹

A further problem with Turkic and Armenian scholarship in this field is their tendency to research the tradition purely from one ethnic or linguistic perspective, rather than as an organic whole. This narrow viewpoint undermines the integrity of the domain, which by definition is international. It is only once we gain a clearer understanding of the movement as a whole that we can accurately distinguish the specific characteristics any of its subfields may exhibit.

An extension of the above problem is that both Turkic and Armenian research has borrowed the term “school” from modern literary and artistic coteries pursuing common aesthetic principles and applied it loosely to their own field as a means of distinguishing bards from the same city or region. Thus, from Garegin Levonyan on, Armenian scholars have distinguished at least three major “schools” of early modern Armenian aşuƗs according to their geographical distributions and the languages in which they

¹ Quite a few Armenian and Turkish scholars, e.g., Garegin Levonyan, Pertev Naili Boratav, had taken notice of this distinction. Unfortunately, this initiative is not well continued. Later, Armenian scholars more often treat Armenian aşuƗ tradition as a continuation of early medieval Armenian gusan tradition, and a kind of folk literature; while in Turkey, the aşık study is often carried out by folklorists.
This, however, dilutes the sense of close affiliation in principles, programs, styles, etc. in employing the term merely to denote parallels in geography, ethnicity, or language. It is impossible to estimate the significance of any subfields in the discipline before an effective comparative study of the bards of various nations in West Asia is made. Therefore, comparisons between Armenian and Turkic bards’ works are essential, in which Armenian songs by Armenian aşuƗs, Turkish songs by Armenian aşuƗs (also known as Armeno-Turkish aşık songs), and Turkish/Azeri songs by Turkic aşık/aşıqs are analyzed altogether. This then provides a foundation for a more in-depth evaluation of the oeuvre of Sayat’-Nova, who composed in both Armenian and Azeri.

The rather unsystematic and impressionistic approach which has partly typified general studies of the bardic tradition is also observable in discussions of Sayat’-Nova, especially with regard to his identity as an aşuƗ. Though nobody denies his being an aşuƗ, many monographs dedicated to him (for example, Suren Harut’yunyan’s Ergi hančarĕ Sayat’-Nova and Xoren Sargsyan’s Sayat’-Nova), lack detailed discussion about the impact of his training or aşuƗ features in his songs. At the same time, many collections of Armenian aşuƗ songs from the Soviet era entirely exclude Sayat’-Nova. Only Hasmik Sahakyan has a discussion in which Sayat’-Nova is more involved in the introduction to her Hay aşuƗner XVII-XVIII dd. Apart from the one exception of comparing Sayat’-Nova with Naşa Yovnat’an, the famous Tiflis Armenian aşuƗ of the early eighteenth century, whom many regard as Sayat’-Nova’s forerunner, Sayat’-

---

2 Levonyan, 1944, pp. 34-45.
3 An example of such misusage might be found in: Hakimov, 2006, pp. 188-194.
4 Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 49-59.
5 For example, in the preface to Č`opanean, 1906, pp. 12-18; Hovhannes T`umanyan also has an article...
Nova’s ašuƗ identity is largely overlooked.

That Sayat’-Nova is rarely contextualized in a bardic matrix also has further implications. In many monographs, he is treated more as a well-educated, elite poet, whose works are written in an elevated literary language for an elite readership, rather than as an ašuƗ composing in an idiom closer to the spoken language for oral performance to a wider audience. This has inevitably led to numerous comparisons and parallels drawn between Sayat’-Nova and famous poets, from East to West, often based on superficial external similarities in images or tropes rather than an in-depth analysis of the given authors and their ambience. Similarly, Dowsett’s comparisons of Sayat’-Nova with Provençal troubadours of the thirteenth to fourteenth centuries do not take into consideration the major differences in period, situation, and conventions between these two traditions. Even fewer comparisons have been made between Sayat’-Nova and comparable Turkic aşık/aşıqs of the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries, or internal comparison of Sayat’-Nova’s different styles in different languages (Armenian, Azeri, Georgian).

In view of the above, the current dissertation sets about correcting this oversight by contextualizing Sayat’-Nova in the development of the bardic tradition in early modern West Asia, comparing his works first and foremost with contemporary bards.

---

6 For example, with twelfth-century troubadour Bernard de Ventadorn: Dowsett, 1997, pp.133-134.
7 There is only one parallel between Azerbaijani Abbas Tufarğanlı and Sayat’-Nova’s respective one “name sake” song Bayənməz (Unlovable), see: Yerevanlı, 1958, pp. 498-500. But this “name sake” is only based on Tufarğanlı’s Azeri original and Araslı’s Azeri translation of Sayat’-Nova’s Georgian original. Only in Bakhch’iyan 1988 there is a bit more discussion about the great ašuƗ’s own diversity of styles in different language compositions; but with few comparison.
both Armenian and Turkic, before considering his possible affinities with elite Armenian, Perso-Turkic, and Georgian poetry.

Although the many collections, monographs, and articles published deal with various aspects of Sayat`-Nova’s life and works, none treats another important aspect of the poet’s legacy, the process by which he rose from relative obscurity in the early nineteenth century to become a cultural icon in the twentieth century, the contours of the process largely depending on a range of changing socio-political factors. These impacted both scholarly activities as well as much wider cultural manifestations in Armenia, Southern Caucasia, and the Soviet Union in general, depending on the period. This dissertation therefore seeks to remedy the current lack of a study on the ideological impetus behind cultural activities relating to Sayat`-Nova and the impact of these activities in both academia and society at large.
Chapter Breakdown

Chapter 1: Literature Review

This chapter introduces the dissertation’s core figure and the issues he raises for an understanding of the bardic tradition of composition and performance he represents. It begins by reviewing the current state of Sayat’-Nova scholarship, outlining the important advances made in clarifying aspects of his biography and chronology and the collection and publishing of his songs before drawing attention to important areas that have received less detailed coverage, which are explored here as a basis for an orderly discussion of more specific problems taken up in the subsequent chapters.

Chapter 2: The bardic Tradition and Sayat’-Nova’s Profile

This chapter constructs a general outline of the characteristics of the bardic tradition that evolved in Anatolia and Caucasia in the early modern period associated with the term ašuƗ/aşıк/aşıq (lover), of which Sayat’-Nova is an exponent, and to assess the degree to which his training and professional activities are representative of the genre as a whole. This chapter thus lays the theoretical basis for the discussion of Sayat’-Nova’s poetic output in next chapters.

The chapter opens with an overview of the evolution of the bardic genre in our region both in Turkic and Armenian from the sixteenth century until the end of the eighteenth century. Its findings underscore the international character of the movement and its development.
On the basis of previous studies, the next section sets about establishing the parameters of the bardic tradition widely typical of this geographical and historical sphere with regard to the primary categories of training, professional lifestyle, ambience, performance structure and venue, audience, etc. In so doing it will address features such as the master-pupil relationship and associated conventions such as the authenticating dream which preceded the apprentice’s graduation, the interrelation between the two aspects of bardic performance, the *hikâye* or prose narrative, which was mainly composed orally, and the subgenres of song marked by a diversity of themes, styles, and prosody performed to stringed accompaniment. Attention is also paid to conventions like competitions in which bards were called upon to display their skills in extempore performance. Finally, the question is examined as to whether ethnic Armenian bards exhibit any common features that distinguish them as a subgroup within the broader matrix.

The chapter also provides a clear classification of the contrastive paradigms reflected by the *aşık* tradition and folklore supported by an array of examples from Anatolia and Caucasia in this period. That is followed by a comparative review of the key elements of Sayat’-Nova’s biography from his așuƗ training to his admission to the Georgian court to corroborate the bard’s characteristic and distinctive features as an exponent of this art form.

Chapter 3: Sayat’-Nova’s Armeno-Azeri compositions in the general context of sixteenth to eighteenth centuries bardic literature
As the previous chapter concentrates on external characteristics, the next three focus on the internal evidence of Sayat’-Nova’s songs in Azeri, Armenian, and Georgian, situating the first two within the bardic matrix and the third within the parameters of elite literary transmission. Building on previous research, Chapter 3 opens with a more detailed classification of aşuğ composition, followed by a more thorough overview of Armeno-Turkic aşuğ compositions. It then examines the possible existence of common traits distinguishing an Armenian subgroup within the wider matrix, and the emerging paradigm is employed to define the profile of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs in terms of their characteristic and more distinctive features.

Chapter 4: Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian composition in the context of sixteenth to eighteenth centuries bardic literature

This chapter situates Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs within the context of the Turkic aşık tradition and investigates the place of the bard’s Armenian songs within the evolving early modern Armenian aşuğ tradition. This involves analyzing the parameters of the Armenian corpus in relation to the Turkic paradigm in terms of its formal characteristics, incorporating in the selection works of early modern ethnic Armenian aşuğs composing both in Turkic and Armenian like Sayat’-Nova and others writing only in their mother tongue, such as Łul Egaz, Amir Oili, Yart’un Öili, Šamč’i-Melk’o, etc. The necessity of this approach is predicated on the unevenness of previous research where discussion is limited to only one linguistic tradition or the other. The resulting framework is then used to define Sayat’-Nova’s profile in the Armenian domain also,
noting those aspects in continuity with the larger group as well as those facets which distinguish him from that norm. Several scholars have argued impressionistically that the latter are to be interpreted as innovations on his part. The more systematic investigation undertaken here then clarifies the accuracy of that assessment.

Chapter 5: Sayat’-Nova, the sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian ašuƗ tradition, and elite poetic traditions of the area

This chapter explores the level of affinity Sayat’-Nova and other sixteenth to eighteenth century. Armenian ašuƗs bear with the contemporary elite Perso-Turkic, Armenian, and Georgian poetic registers, as commented upon by scholars like Paruyr Sevak or Henrik Baxč`inyan with regard to the first and Šubēn Abrahamean in connection with the second.

Granted the enormous impact Persian lyric exerted throughout the medieval Near East and the range of influences on medieval Armenian verse documented by Č’ugaszyan and others, and the specific parallels Abrahamean has pinpointed between Sayat’-Nova and Persian poets, this chapter first engages with this element of the bard’s work, trying to distinguish the precise categories represented (direct citations, themes, imagery, etc.). Similarly, possible impacts from elevated Turkic poetry, be it Ottoman divan poetry or classical Azeri poetry, are also explored.

Then the often impressionistic in-passing remarks found in earlier scholarship are subjected to a more comprehensive analysis first of the influence on Sayat´-Nova, and whenever possible, on other early modern Armenian ašuƗs, from the rich tradition of
classical Armenian lyric (tašasacʿutʿiwn), whose practitioners were exclusively ecclesiastics of various ranks that had received varying degrees of education in a church or monastery. Though Sayat-Nova is the most accomplished Armenian ašuf from this period and arguably bears most influence from the elevated Perso-Turkic poetic traditions, it is important to contextualize that within Armenian ašufs’ general trends in that period. This allows a proper evaluation of the smaller pool of Sayat-Nova’s themes within this larger cross section.

For the sake of completeness, the third section reviews the state of research on Sayat-Nova’s much smaller Georgian corpus which does not belong to the bardic style but to the distinct tradition of Georgian court poetry similarly under significant Persian influence that reflects the bard’s position as a court poet of king Erekle II in the 1750s.

The final section integrates the results of previous analyses of Sayat-Nova, combining his professional profile as bard with his characteristics as a composer of bardic verse in Azeri and Armenian and courtly verse in Georgian within the wider context of his varied external literary influences. This provides a more holistic sketch of this remarkable poet’s achievements set against the diversity of the cultural landscape of his native city Tiflis in the Early Modern period.

Chapter 6: Sayat-Nova’s Posthumous Status as a Cultural Icon

The final chapter tracks the transformation of the poet’s identity and significance for contemporaries under the impact of competing modern ideologies on the bard and his output and their evaluation first of all in Southern Caucasia and then Eurasia in the
course of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. Whereas Sayat’-Nova’s legacy seems to have been forgotten by the early decades of the nineteenth century, a German-style Romantic Nationalism expanding in Russian Transcaucasia impelled ethnographers to collect his works along with elements of folklore in the 1840s, thus already at that time combining two very different literary genres, which were now perceived as receptacles of ‘national culture’. In contrast, the infusion of international socialist projects in Transcaucasia in the second half of the century paved the way for Armenian and Georgian interest in materials of the polyglot bard in those two languages in the early years of the twentieth century.

Under the Soviet period the chapter focuses on the bard’s appreciation first as a representative of the laity rather than being an ecclesiastic like most early and medieval Armenian writers. However, it seeks to interpret the unprecedented explosion of scholarly production on him in parallel with various more popular manifestations (literature, namings of streets, cultural and artistic groups etc., paintings, statues, films, etc.) in the Khrushchev period as a reflection of the policy of Druzhba Narodov (Friendship of Peoples) designed to stem separatist tendencies in the Southern Caucasian republics after the failure of Stalin’s policy of unification. His dwelling in Tiflis and composing in all three languages of the region rendered him an ideal figure to symbolize this ideal of harmony and cooperation while still acknowledging the distinctiveness of the three main peoples there. Most of the publications, tangible or visual monuments to him, which are still visible today, date from that period. This explains the striking output of scholars in Georgia and Azerbaijan in this period, which
is unparalleled either before or since.

In contrast, the chapter argues that it was precisely the recrudescence of nationalism in the USSR in the 1980s, which significantly contributed to the downfall of the Soviet edifice that led to an almost complete neglect in Georgia and total disregard for the poet in Azerbaijan. In Armenia, in contrast, despite the gradual marginalization of the aşık tradition beginning in the mid-century, Sayat’-Nova’s popular significance has continued to expand into the independent republic with ever new performances and CD releases of his songs, films and plays retracing his life, and new approaches to interpreting his works. The chapter is of particular importance in providing a context within which to view several of the scholarly positions taken in the literature.
Section 1 Review of scholarship on Sayat’-Nova

Under this general title several categories and subcategories should be distinguished. The first deals with the corpus of Sayat’-Nova’s works, further divided into manuscript sources and publications; while the second category is the corpus of studies about Sayat’-Nova. Three major aspects can be distinguished in Sayat’-Nova studies: biographical, literary, and musicological. Of the three subdivisions, articles in the first two are more often included in the same monograph. Chapters on Sayat’-Nova in a number of histories of Armenian literature, either general or focusing on that period, similarly deal with these two aspects, i.e., his life and works together, at the same time. In this regard, the titles of these monographs and general histories of Armenian literature comprise a separate section, with important monographs or articles dealing exclusively with only one main aspect of Sayat’-Nova studies, i.e., his life, literature or music, will be classified in the corresponding sections. Reference works form a separate section.

A. Manuscript sources of Sayat’-Nova’s works

The fundamental source is undoubtedly Sayat’-Nova’s own manuscript, the *Davt`ar*. It was copied by Sayat’-Nova himself in the 1760s after he became a married priest. Only the Turkish and Armenian songs are included here. The original Davt`ar
passed down among individuals for more than 100 years and has been kept in the National Museum of Literature and Art in Yerevan, Armenia from the 1920s on. Two facsimiles were published in 1963 and 2005.¹

The second important comprehensive manuscript of Sayat’-Nova’s songs is the collection made by Ioane (Ōhan in Armenian),² Sayat’-Nova’s youngest son, in the 1820s, at the request of T’eimuraz, crown prince of the deposed Georgian Bagratid royal family. In this collection, Sayat’-Nova’s Georgian songs were collected for the first time. Ōhan also added notes in addition to those his father had left. This manuscript is now kept as MS Georg No.222 in the library of the Institute for the Peoples of Asia in Saint Petersburg.

The songs included in these two manuscripts make up the core of Sayat’-Nova’s works. Subsequently, other songs were discovered and attributed to him. Sources for these songs are listed in the endnotes to both Morus Hasrat’yan and Henrik Baxč`inyan’s publications of Sayat’-Nova’s collected works. However, most of these were inaccessible to me during my research. Since their artistic features do not appear very consistent with those collected in the two manuscripts previously referred to, it was decided not to include these supplementary songs in my study. This question will be discussed in greater detail in chapter 2.

B. Printed collections of Sayat’-Nova’s songs

² Or in Russian fashion as he called himself, Ivan Seidov.
In the 1840s, Gēorg Axverdean, who was collecting Armenian folk songs, took notice of Sayat’-Nova. He prepared the first edition of the latter’s songs for publication, which was realized in 1852\(^3\) as the first volume of his collections of Armenian ašuƗ songs.\(^4\) In this collection, Axverdean published only Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs, 46 in number; but with striking contributions, whose significance will be outlined in the treatment of literary studies of Sayat’-Nova.

In the following decades, more of Sayat’-Nova’s songs were discovered and published, most intensively in The intellectual life of Tiflis Armenians by Gēorg Tēr-Aİek’sandrean\(^5\) and by Gēorg Asatur, published in Azgagranakan handēs,\(^6\) after the editor’s study of Ōhan’s manuscript in St. Petersburg. His Georgian songs were published piecemeal in the 1870s as well,\(^7\) leading to the publication of the first collection of these Georgian songs by I. Grišašvili in 1918.\(^8\)

During the early Soviet era, still more of Sayat’-Nova’s songs were retrieved and published in Yerevan, Tbilisi, or Baku.\(^9\) The first noteworthy collection of Sayat’-Nova’s songs in this period was prepared by Garegin Levonyan, founder of Armenian ašuƗ studies.\(^10\)

---

\(^3\) Gusank` A, Sayeata’-Nova, Vladimir Gusti, Moscow, 1852.

\(^4\) The second volume was published posthumously as Gusank`, B, hay ašuƗnerê, Azgagranakan Handēs ed., Aragatip Mnać’akan Martiroseanc’, Tiflis, 1903. It is a general collection of Armenian poems and songs.

\(^5\) Tiflisset-sots’ mtavor keank’ê, Masn A Banastecom’iwn, Tiflis, Yovhannēs Martiroseanc’ı Tparan, 1886

\(^6\) Eight in number, Azgagranakan Handēs, 1903/10; as quoted in Henrik Baxč’inyan, Sayat’-Nova: kyank’ê ev gorič, p. 7.

\(^7\) As quoted in Henrik Baxč’inyan, 1987, pp. 7-8.

\(^8\) Saiat’-nova, Tiflis, 1911, as quoted from Henrik Baxč’inyan, 1987, p. 11.

\(^9\) For example, Gevorg T’arverdyan, Hay ašuƗner: antip yergeri zhoghovarts (XVII-XX darer), Yerevani Petakan Hamsarsani Tparan, Yerevan, 1937. The other publications are scattered and difficult to trace. For their bibliography, see: Baxč’inyan, 1987.

\(^10\) Sayat’-Nova, hayeren xaferi liakatar žolovacu, Petakan Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1931.
The next important collection was prepared by Morus Hasrat’yan. Although its first edition appeared in 1945, the best of all its editions appeared in 1963 in honor of the 200th anniversary of Sayat’-Nova’s birth. This edition embraces the whole of Sayat’-Nova’s trilingual corpus hitherto discovered, including an excellent translation of the Georgian and Armeno-Azeri songs into the Armenian dialect of Tbilisi, comprehensive endnotes, a glossary of difficult words, and index to proper names. Perhaps because of the volume’s large printrun, it remains the most accessible edition in the Republic of Armenia until now.

It is worth mentioning here that in 1945 a collection of Sayat’-Nova’s songs was published in Tehran, Iran by an Iranian-Armenian scholar Řubēn Abrahamean. But the most significant aspect of this edition is not much the texts of Sayat’-Nova’s songs as the discussions preceding them. For further details, see the section on literary studies of Sayat’-Nova.

In 1963, two other important collections edited by famous Georgian and Azerbaijani scholars were published. In Tbilisi, a collection of Sayat’-Nova’s Georgian songs was released under the editorship of Alek’andre Baramiže, which remains the best of its kind. In Baku, Həmid Araslı published a selection of Sayat’-Nova’s songs, including those originally in Azeri, together with a modern Azeri translation of many Armenian and Georgian songs. Though the Azeri songs in this collection are only

12 Sayat’-Novayi taferé : neracakan hőduatsof, lezui usumnasirut’eamb, bașaranov ev ayl hőduacnerov u ditohut’ıwnnerov, Šawasp T’ovmasean, Tehran, 1943.
around forty, and the editing leaves much to be desired, it appears to be the largest number of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs collated by Azerbaijani scholars so far.

After Hasrat’yan’s, the next important collection of Sayat’-Nova’s songs was prepared by Henrik Baxë`inyan and others in the late 1980s. Baxë`inyan’s collection of Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs was published separately in 1984, while his trilingual collection, which could be regarded as a more complete and improved version of the former, appeared in 1987. This new trilingual collection was prepared by Baxë`inyan together with the orientalist Nikolay Gevorgyan and the kartvelologist Hraç`ya Bayramyan. In this edition, Sayat’-Nova’s Georgian and Armeno-Azeri songs are published in the original (in Armenian transliteration) along with parallel literal translations, as well as artistic translations of some from either Baxë`inyan or Hasrat’yan, together with notes, vocabularies, and an index of proper names.

The last major collection so far appeared in 2003, once more edited by H. Baxë`inyan. It should be stated that none of these editions meets the criteria for a critical edition in that the variants between the Daftar and Ohan’s manuscript for example are not recorded in the apparatus. However, the latest it is still extensive. In this edition, the Georgian or Armeno-Azeri songs are published only in Armenian translation. Each is provided with a verbatim translation, while some also feature artistic translations. A significant difference between the two publications is that in the

15 For example, Dowsett, 1995, p.422.
1987 edition all the Armenian songs, original or in translation, are presented in the reformed orthography of the Armenian script, while in the edition of 2003 they appear in the traditional spelling. This edition also contains an introduction to Sayat’-Nova, his life and works, and the history of Sayat’-Nova studies by Baxč’inian, a detailed introduction to the Davt’ar, which also comes from Baxč’inian; an article on Sayat’-Nova’s songs by Hrač’ya Šems;\(^\text{19}\) 20 songs’ Western Armenian translations; 35 melodies; a vocabulary and index of proper names.

I have selected Baxč’inian’s 1987 edition as the principal text of Sayat’-Nova for this study. Though, as mentioned before, none of the published editions can be called fully critical in the full sense, still, this is the only one that includes all Sayat’-Nova’s original Armenian, Georgian, and Azeri songs, albeit the latter two in Armenian transliteration only, with songs included in the Davt’ar in their original order, plus verbatim Armenian translations of all, and quite extensive notes, all of which render it the most comprehensive collection of Sayat’-Nova’s songs that I have encountered. However, most of the Armenian songs included in Appendix B to the Armenian section, and Azeri songs 118-120 in Appendix B to the Azeri section will be largely excluded from my study,\(^\text{20}\) since they derive not from the Davt’ar or Ohan’s manuscript, but later scholars’ collections, so that their authenticity has not been established.

C. Comprehensive monographs on Sayat’-Nova

\(^\text{19}\) Unfortunately, publication details of this article are absent from Baxč’inian’s collection as well as Šems’ collective works.

\(^\text{20}\) See their respective endnotes in Baxč’inian’s collection: Xaler, pp. 465-468, 499.
The first is Gēorg Axverdean’s collection of Sayat’-Nova’s songs. As mentioned before, Axverdean added notes to the songs, translated Sayat’-Nova’s and Ōhan’s notes from Georgian to Armenian, and compiled a vocabulary of foreign words used by Sayat’-Nova. He also prepared biographical notes and an extensive explanation of the grammatical peculiarities of the Tiflis Armenian dialect, in which Sayat’-Nova created his Armenian songs. These notes remain useful even to this day.

The next important contributor to Sayat’-Nova studies is Hovhannes T’umanyan. In the 1890s, T’umanyan had already taken an interest in Sayat’-Nova. But it was only in 1911 that he began to publish articles about him. Those treated all the significant spheres of Sayat’-Nova studies, including his life and the interpretation and criticism of his songs both in their aesthetic and social aspects. These articles were republished in book form in the Soviet era. T’umanyan’s other contribution to Sayat’-Nova studies will be treated in the last chapter of this study. Besides T’umanyan, the Georgian-Armenian painter and social figure Grigor Bašinţiyan and the Georgian scholar and writer Ioseb Grišašvili also contributed to the study of Sayat’-Nova’s life and works; the effort all three exerted in popularizing Sayat’-Nova will be addressed later.

During the early Soviet era, no important comprehensive study about Sayat’-Nova appeared. Nevertheless, his place in histories of Armenian and Georgian literature of

22 As quoted from Henrik Başc’inyan, op. cit., pp. 8-11. T’umanyan’s articles are collected in Sayat’-Nova as noted above; Başinţiyan’s (Armenian original) and Grišašvili’s articles (in Armenian translation) are collected in: T. A. Karapetyan, G.N. Hovnani ed., Hayastan ev hay kulturayi masin, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakchet’yun, Yerevan, 1983.
the early modern period was secure. In both Manuk AbeƗyan’s *History of ancient Armenian literature* and the *History of ancient Georgian literature*, under the chief editorship of Korneli Kekelizե, there are chapters and sections exclusively dedicated to him.\(^{23}\)

At the climax of Sayat`-Nova-oriented publications in 1963, several collections of articles appeared. Most of them are brief compendia amounting to no more than 300 pages, and focus primarily on Sayat`-Nova’s works. Among them, Suren Harut`yunian’s *Genius of Song: Sayat`-Nova* is more comprehensive in its contents. It begins with the history of Sayat`-Nova studies, then the historical background for Sayat`-Nova and his compositional activities, before treating aesthetics and analyses of his thought.\(^{24}\) It is also worth mentioning here Paruyr Muradyan’s *Sayat`-Nova according to Georgian sources*,\(^{25}\) since besides the historical records it collects, as the title suggests, the compiler also discusses Sayat`-Nova’s literary merits in the context of the history of Georgian literature, making comparisons between Sayat`-Nova and Besiki, the other great Georgian poet of the period, Sayat`-Nova’s younger successor in the Georgian court, among other topics.

The next comprehensive monograph of Sayat`-Nova studies is Paruyr Sevak’s *Sayat`-Nova*, published in 1969\(^{26}\) and republished in 1984. This basically contains the published version of the author’s doctoral thesis, for which he was awarded the degree

\(^{23}\) As quoted from Henrik Baxč`inyan, 1987, pp. 11-12, 16.


in 1967. This highly successful book is divided into two main parts: the first “When was Sayat`-Nova born?” argues for 1722 as the year of Sayat`-Nova’s birth. The second “Sayat`-Nova’s creative works” deals with the songs’ aesthetic features. Here Sevak examines several aspects of Sayat`-Nova’s songs, from motifs to rhetoric. In his poetic language, Sevak stresses love as the nucleus of Sayat`-Nova’s songs. Then he highlights the “individual” features in Sayat`-Nova’s songs: his more elevated style of love lyrics, his innovative language, his keen observation and vivid expression, etc. Paruyr Sevak makes numerous comparisons between Sayat`-Nova and a large number of accomplished poets from different nations. He draws numerous parallels between Sayat`-Nova and these poets, and comes to the conclusion that Sayat`-Nova is unique among Armenian ašuƗs of that period. Judging from his artistic accomplishments, he is well qualified as a poet. But within the rank of poets, he is a performing ašuƗ, he composes in the form and language of ašuƗs, which facts delineate him a unique poet as well.

Published in 1987, Vač’e Nalbandyan’s Sayat`-Nova seems like a good compression of previous studies. In less than 200 pages, its author talks about Sayat`-Nova’s life, the history of Sayat`-Nova studies, the philological and literary features of Sayat`-Nova’s songs.

After Paruyr Sevak’s work, the next major comprehensive study of the great Armenian ašuƗ is Henrik Baxč`inyan’s Sayat`-Nova: life and work. Like Sevak’s,

---

Baxč`inyan’s monograph is also fundamentally his own dissertation. However, this book is more complete in its structure. The preface is a brief review of the history of Sayat`-Nova studies. The introduction narrates the historical background and urban setting in Tiflis. The first major section of the dissertation is Sayat`-Nova’s life. The second part, Sayat`-Nova’s works, is divided into three chapters: typological questions, sources and traditions, and the aesthetic values of the bard’s works. This book is the last major monograph on Sayat`-Nova from the Soviet period.

Since the collapse of the USSR no new important monograph of Sayat`-Nova studies has appeared in the Republic of Armenia. However, in 1997, Charles Dowsett, a famous Armenologist from Oxford University, published his Sayat`-Nova: an eighteenth-century troubadour. It is the most significant recent monograph on Sayat`-Nova. The content of this twelve-chapter book can be quite evenly divided into the two categories. The first is Sayat`-Nova’s life and work, which comprises a meticulous philological study of Sayat`-Nova’s works and related literary sources, more detailed than any other existing monographs in the comprehensiveness of its notes. Nevertheless, some of the author’s views, as, for example, concerning the authorship of six Russian poems in Ōhan’s manuscript, are very controversial.

D. Important articles exclusively dealing with Sayat`-Nova’s life

In the 1930s, the first manuscript copied by Sayat`-Nova was discovered and

studied, leading to the identification of *ašuƗ* Sayat’-Nova with the priest Step`anos of Kax in 1766.

From 1969 on, a debate ensued about the exact location of the “HaƗpat monastic community”, where Fr. Step`anos stayed during his years of celibate priesthood in the late period of his life. In 1981, a new manuscript from his pen was discovered, which confirms his residence in the port AnzaƗ in the Gīlān province of Iran in 1760-1761.

E. Studies exclusively focusing on Sayat’-Nova’s work

The most important monographs about Sayat’-Nova are comprehensive in their content. The first of these was written by Nikol Albalean who persisted in his Sayat’-Nova studies after his exile from the Caucasus and published a series of articles entitled *With Sayat’-Nova* in the journal *Azdak Šabatoreak* in Beirut from 1944 to 1947, which, however, remained incomplete.

In his study mentioned above Ṗrubēn Abrahamean was perhaps the first to discuss the Persian elements in Sayat’-Nova’s songs, while his analysis of the “prime aesthetic lines” of Sayat’-Nova’s songs focuses largely on prosodic and euphonic issues, as well as a short comparison between Sayat’-Nova and a few famous medieval Persian poets.

---

31 As quoted from Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 19. Kax (Georgian *Kaxi*) is modern Qax in Azerbaijan.
32 Ibid.
especially Bābā Ṭāher `Uriyān.

In 1954, Mirəli Seydov published his research about Sayat’-Nova in Azeri, the first monograph about the aşuƗ in the language in which Sayat’-Nova composed most of his songs. In this book, the author talks about the Armenian aşuƗ tradition and the themes in Sayat’-Nova’s songs.

In 1963, several works appeared in Armenian. The Committee for Higher and Secondary Professional Education of Armenia and the Abovyan State Pedagogical Institute edited a collection of scholarly articles about Sayat’-Nova, covering a range of historical, philological, musicological and literary studies. Xoren Sargsyan’s *Sayat’-Nova* deals with four topics about Sayat’-Nova’s songs, some of which, for example the fourth, “The People’s Anger and Instigation”, are quite typically Soviet. Of those literary comments produced by diasporan Armenian scholars, perhaps that of the Mkhitarist scholar Mesrop Čanaşean is the most profound. It begins with an introduction to the historical background, followed by a brief review of the history of Sayat’-Nova studies, a lengthy index of the numbering of Sayat’-Nova’s songs’ in different manuscripts, the first lines, years of composition, and types of songs, then a biographical introduction to Sayat’-Nova, and literary analysis of his songs, in which prosodic matters loom large.

---

F. Studies of Sayat’-Nova’s music

Only the melodies of some of Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs have survived. The first collection of those dates from the 1890s, when H. T’umanyan and others took interest in the great Armenian așuľ. But today the most popular publication of those melodies was produced by Mușel Alayan and Šara Talyan in 1946, and republished in 1963.  

In 1990, Hasmig Injejikian from the Faculty of Music at McGill University, Montreal, submitted an MA thesis *Sayat’-Nova and Armenian Ashoogh musical tradition*. It is the first thesis on Sayat’-Nova in a major Western language. In 1995, Nikołos T’ahmizean published *Sayat’-Nova and the Armenian minstrel tradition*, the core of which is a discussion of Sayat’-Nova’s aesthetics, poetics, and music. T’ahmizean’s analysis of Sayat’-Nova’s melodies involves a more detailed discussion about music and different genres of așuľ songs than Injejikian had pursued.

G. Reference books about Sayat’-Nova Studies

In 1963, several such reference works appeared. Paruyr Muradyan’s *Sayat’-Nova according to Georgian Sources* already mentioned is more than a pure work of reference. In *The Popular Sources of Sayat’-Nova’s Works*, Aram Łanalanyan discusses Sayat’-Nova's music.
Nova’s relation to folk literature\textsuperscript{42}. Garinik Ananyan’s \textit{Sayat’-Nova in Poets’ Songs}\textsuperscript{43} is a collection of poetry on Sayat’-Nova by poets from different nations in the Russian and Soviet domain, primarily Armenian. The last reference book published in 1963 mentioned here is Ashot Koč’o’yan’s \textit{Dictionary of Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian Poems}\textsuperscript{44}, a dictionary of difficult, ancient, dialectal, and foreign words appearing in Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs.

The last reference book to be mentioned here is Łazaryan’s \textit{Sayat’-Nova}\textsuperscript{45}, a good collection of songs, poems, comments, and bibliography about the bard.

\section*{H. Translations of Sayat’-Nova in major languages}

The first translation of Sayat’-Nova’s works of this kind was effected in 1851,\textsuperscript{46} when Iakov Polonskii, with the help of Gëorg Axverdean, provided an introduction to Sayat’-Nova and translated some of his songs into Russian in prose even before the publication of Axverdean’s first collection.

In 1906, Aršak Č’opanean published his \textit{Les Trouvères Arméniens},\textsuperscript{47} which is the first introduction to the Armenian ašuƗ tradition in a major Western language. It features a preface and translations of various medieval and early modern Armenian poems and songs, including some of Sayat’-Nova’s works.

\textsuperscript{42} Sayat’-Novayi stelcagorcut’yan žolovrdakan albyurnerĕ, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1963.
\textsuperscript{43} Sayat’-Novan banastefneri ergerum, Haypethrat, Yerevan, 1963.
\textsuperscript{44} Sayat’-Novayi hayeren khagheri bararan, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakchut’yun, Yerevan, 1963.
\textsuperscript{45} Sayat’-Nova (met odamatenagitakan nyu’eri žolovacu), HSSH Petakan Gradaran, Yerevan, 1987.
\textsuperscript{46} Kavkaz, 1851, No.1-2; as quoted from Baxč’ inyan, op.cit., p.6.
\textsuperscript{47} Par Archag Tchobanian, Société du Mercure de France, Paris, 1906. But it is to be mentioned here that in this collection, Č’opanean had works of medieval cleric authors and early modern secular ašuƗs collected and translated together.
The most famous translator of Sayat’-Nova into Russian is undoubtedly Valeriǐ Briusov, who was himself an accomplished poet. His collection of Armenian poetry in Russian translation, *Armenian poetry from the most ancient time to our days*, was published in Moscow in 1916.\(^{48}\) It is one of the most comprehensive collections of its kind and includes twelve translations of Sayat’-Nova’s songs. More significant for this study Briusov’s discussion of the artistic features of Sayat’-Nova’s works in the preface to this collection, which is an ardent praise of the ašuƗ. Perhaps due to this highly affirmative evaluation, Briusov’s remarks later became the most frequently quoted foreign comment about Sayat’-Nova in works published in Armenia.

After Briusov, there are at least five other translations of Sayat’-Nova’s works into Russian, all of which were prepared and published during the Soviet era, by scholars like Suren Harut’yunyan, Grigor Abov, Ioseb Grişašvili etc.\(^6\)\(^{49}\) The last of these translations, rendered by G. A. T`at`osyan, published in Leningrad, 1982, is a full translation of Sayat’-Nova’s original corpus in three languages, with annotations and an introduction by Vač’e Nalbandyan.\(^6\)\(^{50}\)

At least in 1936 and 1963, when anniversaries of Sayat’-Nova’s birth or death were commemorated in the former Soviet Union, publications of his songs appeared in different languages. For example, the translation published in 1963\(^{51}\) includes an introduction and translations of a small number of his works in English, French,


\(^{49}\) As quoted from Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 350

\(^{50}\) *Sayat-Nova: Stikhotvoreniiia*, Introduction: V. S. Nal’bandian; Compiled and Noted by G. A. Tatosian, Sovetskiĭ Pisatel’, Leningradskoe otdelenie, Leningrad, 1982

German, and Spanish. But both the number of translated works and the printrun are very limited. Armen Donoyan’s *Sayat Nova in Armenian and in English*, published in the 1990s, contains more than a dozen songs translated into pseudo-Shakespearian English. This is followed by Charles Dowsett’s *Sayat’-Nova: an eighteenth-century troubadour*. There Dowsett presents a considerable number of Sayat’-Nova’s songs, originally written in different languages, translated into English. However, since his translations are given primarily to illustrate his arguments, they appear throughout his book without regard to chronology or their sequence in full collections.

Most recently thirteen English translations of twelve of Sayat’-Nova’s original songs appeared in the second volume of *The heritage of Armenian literature*, published in 200. However, these are merely reprints of existing translations by Dowsett and others.

Section 2 Review of Armenian ašuƗ studies

As this investigation focuses on the bardic tradition in early modern Western Asia, works exclusively dedicated to the nineteenth and twentieth century bardic tradition will be mentioned only where necessary.

From the mid-nineteenth century Armenian scholars began collecting Armenian

52 In the main text, the author’s name and the book title appear in their original English form; while in Armenian they will be: Armēn Tonoyean, *Sayat’-Nova hayerēn ew anglerēn*, Navasart publishing house, Glendale, CA, 1996
53 Naturally including Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian, Georgian and Azeri songs; and his *mulamma* or macaronic song, written in all the three languages plus Persian; besides, since Dowsett regards the six Russian songs in Ohan’s manuscript genuinely by Sayat’-Nova, he has a chapter in his book dedicated to the translation and study of these songs.
54 Edited by Agop J. Hacikyan, together with Gabriel Basmajian, Edward S. Franchuk, Nourhan Ouzounian, Wayne State Univ. Press, Detroit, IL; pp. 1057-1070.
ašuƗ songs along with works of folklore. It is worthy restating here that Gëorg Axverdean gathered Sayat’-Nova’s songs for the first printed collection because of his interest in Armenian folk songs. Consequently, early collections tended to combine ašuƗ songs with folk songs and sometimes even with the creations of literary poets almost indiscriminately.55

Research specializing on Armenian ašuƗs and their art began late in the century. In 1892, Garegin Levonyan, son of the celebrated ašuƗ Ėivani, published his Armenian ašuƗs.56 In this book, for the first time in the history of Armenian modern scholarship, the author provides a thorough introduction to the Armenian ašuƗ art, starting from the significance of the term ašuƗ, to the ašuƗs’ lifestyle and performing activities, the different genres of ašuƗ songs, etc., but its most voluminous and important contribution is the list he compiled that included biographies or even the songs of 225 Armenian ašuƗs. Such a comprehensive list is unique among Armenian monographs on this subject.

Trdat Palean published his Armenian ašuƗs in Smyrna, 1911-12.57 Further song collections and monographs on the Armenian ašuƗ tradition appeared in Soviet Armenia during the 1930s. Of these, Gevorg T’arverdyan’s Armenian ašuƗs: collection of unpublished songs (XVII-XX cc.) is perhaps the first.58 The songs first collected here reappear in later Soviet publications. The ašuƗs and their art, Garegin Levonyan’s

56 Garegin Lewonean, Hay ašuñner, Hratarakut’iwn “Shirak” Gravaçaranoc‘i, Alek’andrapol, 1892.
57 Trdat episkopos Palean, Hay ašuñner: žolovrdaikan hay ergiç’ner ew takasac’k’, in 2 vol.s, Mamurean Tpagrut’iwn, Smyrna, 1911-1912.
58 Hay ašuñner: antip yergeri žolovacu (XVII-XX darer), Erevani Petakan Hamalsarani Tparan, Yerevan, 1937.
second monograph exclusively dedicated to ašul studies was published in 1944.\(^{59}\) There Levonyan inserted a categorization of Armenian ašułs according to their place of performance, a discussion about ašul contests at a distance, a chapter on the success of Sayat’-Nova, and a more profound discussion of ašul prosody. In 1963, Levonyan’s collected Works, which are almost exclusively dedicated to ašul studies, including literary and bibliographical materials, was published 16 years after his death.\(^{60}\)

In 1957, T’arverdyan’s second collection of Armenian ašul songs was published under the title of Armenian gusans.\(^{61}\) It treats works of Armenian ašułs from the seventeenth to the first half of the twentieth centuries. In 1961, Hasmik Sahakyan published her collection of pre-modern Armenian ašul songs under the title of Armenian ašułs, XVII-XVIII century.,\(^{62}\) in the introduction to which she gives an excellent introduction to her subject.

In the 1960s and 1970s, the Armenian Academy of Science published a five-volume History of modern Armenian literature.\(^{63}\) This important work is a continuation of Manuk Abelyan’s History of ancient Armenian literature. In its first and fourth volume, published in 1962 and 1972, there are chapters on Armenian ašul literature in the first half of the nineteenth century, and in the second half of that century and the beginning of the twentieth century. The first volume contains a section on ašul Širin, while the fourth highlights ašul J̌ivani, both being regarded as the most

---


\(^{60}\) Garegin Levonyan, Erker, Haypethrat, Yerevan, 1963.


accomplished Armenian aşıql of their generation.

Most other collections published in Soviet Armenia after World war II focus on modern aşıqls from the nineteenth century on.64 Other discussions about Armenian aşıqls appeared not as exclusive monographs, but in the context of Armenian folk songs.65 Similarly, other studies treat the earlier Armenian bardic type of gusans; but as they argue for significant continuity between Armenian aşıql art and that of their older counterparts, they often handle both together.66 These afford good discussions and analyses of the history of Armenian aşıql art, the artistic features of their songs, and the latter’s social importance. However, after Levonyan, there is little investigation of aşıqls’ training and performance.

Section 3 Turkish and Azerbaijani aşık/aşıq studies

Collections of aşık songs in Ottoman Turkish exist, of which one striking example is Alî Ufkî’s Mecmûa-i sâz ü söz, a large seventeenth century collection of various melodies, now edited and studied.67

Since the aşık tradition in Turkey was widespread and maintained itself into the second half of the twentieth century, there are numerous publications of aşık literature

64 For example, K. G. Durgaryan ed., Şiraki Hay aşuƗnerĕ (Sovetakan Grôf, Yerevan, 1986), focuses on Armenian aşıqls from the area of Şirak in the last 200 years.
65 A significant example is Manuk AbeƗyan, famous Armenian philologist’s Ancient gusan folk songs (Hin gusanakan žolovridakan erger), Hratarakut’yun Pethamalsarani, Yeren, 1931; also in Erker: P. Hakobyan and S. Harut’yunyan ed., Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1966-1985, vol. 6.
66 For example, ŠaviƗ Grigoryan’s Hayoc’ hin gusanakan ergerĕ, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1971.
collections, both for individual aşık/aşıqs, for aşık/aşıqs in a certain geographical area, or as part of larger anthologies.\textsuperscript{68} Here the emphasis will be placed on studies of the aşık/aşıq tradition in Turkey, with reference only to important collections.

The modern study of the aşık tradition in Turkey dates to the early twentieth century.\textsuperscript{69} In 1914, Fuad Köprülü, one of the founders of modern Turkish literary studies, published a series of articles Saz şairleri in the newspaper \textit{İkdam}, which laid the basis for scholarly investigation of the aşık tradition in Turkey. From then on, Köprülü published scores of articles on the subject\textsuperscript{70} reviewing its history and designation (“özən”) as well as its artistic peculiarities and individual aşık/aşıqs’ life and work. These include one entitled \textit{Turkish literature’s influence on Armenian literature},\textsuperscript{71} which is still of interest,\textsuperscript{72} though it must be argued that since Köprülü talked about Armenian aşık/aşıqs’ writing in Turkish, the issue is rather one of Armenian contributions to Turkish literature, not Turkish influence on Armenian literature. Besides those aşık/aşıqs’ works collected in different articles, he also published collections of aşık songs, individually or in collections. The most famous are the multi-volume \textit{Turkish saz poets}:

\begin{footnotes}
\item[68] For example, Uraz Murat: \textit{Halk edebiyatı, şiir ve dil örnekleri}, Sühulet Kütüphanesi, İstanbul, 1933
\item[69] According to Erman Artun, Ziya Gökalp and Rıza Tevfik had their articles on aşık topics published around 1913, a little earlier than Köprülü. But their works are less important. See Erman Artun, \textit{Âşıklık geleneği ve aşık edebiyatı}, p.23.
\item[70] For a list of important collections, referable Artun, pp.24-25.
\item[72] From the introduction of this article, it is apparent that Köprülü wrote this article in refutation of some Amenologists, including C’opanean (as Köprülü saw from the latter’s preface to \textit{Les Trouvères Arméniens}), who seem to have failed to employ any comparative method in their study, where “even ... the name of Turkish literature seems not mentioned”.  
\end{footnotes}
texts and examinations,\textsuperscript{73} Anthology of Turkish saz poets,\textsuperscript{74} Turkish saz poets: Anthology,\textsuperscript{75} and Turkish Saz Poets.\textsuperscript{76} Some of his important articles on aşık related topics are collected in the anthology Studies of Literature.\textsuperscript{77} Much of Köprülü’s work is philological, for example, his study of the title ozan, the predecessor of aşıks, relying on historical records, classical literature, or dictionaries more than aşıks’ defters.\textsuperscript{78} Nevertheless, he made two valuable observations, the first that aşık literature is different from genuine folk literature and the second that elements of folk literature, classical literature, and Sufi tekke literature are all distinguishable in aşık literature.\textsuperscript{79} His second point has been developed by many Turkish scholars after him,\textsuperscript{80} but unfortunately not the first. Later Turkish aşık studies are more often conducted under folk literature studies, or more specifically, folklore studies, as I will discuss below.

After Fuad Köprülü, from the 1940s on, his student and assistant, the famous folklorist Pertev Naili Boratav, became one of the most distinguished Turkish scholars on aşık studies.\textsuperscript{81} In the 1940s he already published a number of books on Turkish

\textsuperscript{73} Türk sazşairlerine ait metinler ve tetkikler, a collection of both lyrics and music in 6 vol.s, Evkaf Matbaası, İstanbul, 1929-1931.

\textsuperscript{74} Türk sazşairleri antolojisi, in 13 parts, most published by Kanaat kitabevi, İstanbul, 1930-1940.

\textsuperscript{75} Türk sazşairleri: antoloji, in 3 vol.s, Kanaat kitabevi, İstanbul, 1940-1941.

\textsuperscript{76} Türk sazşairleri, in 5 parts, Güven Basımevi, Ankara, 1962-1965.

\textsuperscript{77} Edebiyat araştırmaları, Türk Tarih Kurumu Basımevi, Ankara, 1966.

\textsuperscript{78} Ozan, originally published in Azerbaycan Yurt Bilgisi, No. 3, pp. 138-140, 1932; collected in Edebiyat araştırmaları, pp. 131-144.

\textsuperscript{79} As reflected in his two longest articles on aşık studies: Sazşairleri, dün ve bugün (originally published as his surface to collected Türk sazşairleri, Kanaat kitabevi, İstanbul, 1940-1941; collected in Edebiyat araştırmaları, pp. 165-193) and Türk edebiyatı ‘nda ‘aşıklar tarzı’nın menşe’ ve tekâmüllü hakkında bir tecrübe (originally published in Millî tetebbûlar mecmuası, 1, pp. 5-46, 1915; collected in Edebiyat araştırmaları, pp. 195-238).

\textsuperscript{80} Folk literature, aşıklar literature, tekke literature are often dealt with simultaneously by the same author; for example: Mehmet Yardımcı, Başılgıscandan günümüze halk şiir, aşıklar şiir, tekke şiir, Ürün Yayınları, Ankara, 1998.

\textsuperscript{81} Of course, during the same period, there are a number of good collections or studies about the aşıklar tradition done by other Turkish scholars as well. For example, collection: Uraz Murat, Halk edebiyatı, şiir ve dil örnekleleri, Sühulet Kütüpanesi, İstanbul, 1933; Studies: Ahmet Talat Onay, Halk şiirlerinin şekil ve nev’i, Devlet Matbaası, İstanbul, 1928, republished by Akçağ, Ankara, 1996; Osman Cemal
folklore or folk literature, for example, Courses of folk literature\textsuperscript{82} and Annotated anthology of folk poetry,\textsuperscript{83} which also embrace the aşık tradition. In the 1950s, he made an even more important contribution in the section on the Turkish aşık tradition in the second volume of Philologiae Turcicae Fundamenta,\textsuperscript{84} which introduced foreign readers to the aşık tradition and studies in Turkey thoroughly and systematically for the first time in a major Western language. This introduction begins by explaining the word aşık and offering a brief definition of this tradition, then the characters of its performer, the aşıks, their training, functions and performing venues; thereafter follow the genres of aşık composition, their prosody, styles, and finally, the history of the tradition’s evolution, together with lists of prominent aşıks. It encompassed most aspects of aşık literature, so that subsequent examinations of the topic must make it their starting point.\textsuperscript{85}

After Boratav, his student İlhan Başgöz became one of the most eminent Turkish folklorists, who has also compiled an anthology of Turkish folk literature.\textsuperscript{86} However, his research deals with narrative folk tales more than rhymed songs.\textsuperscript{87} Publications on the Turkish aşık tradition continue to appear.\textsuperscript{88} But it seems the majority are either

Kaygılı, İstanbul’da semai kahveleri ve meydan şairleri, Bürhaneddin Basmevi, İstanbul, 1937.
\textsuperscript{82} Halk edebiyatı dersleri, Uzûk Basmevi, Ankara, 1942.
\textsuperscript{83} İzahlı halk şiiri antolojisi, together with Halil Vedat Furatî, Maarif Matbaası, Ankara, 1968.
\textsuperscript{85} It is worth mentioning here, that after Boratav’s introduction, perhaps the next important monograph on Turkish aşık tradition in a major Western language is: Sänger und Poeten mit der Laute: türkische aşık und ozan, Ursula Reinhard, Tiago de Oliveira Pinto, Dietrich Reimer Verlag, Berlin, 1989.
\textsuperscript{86} İzahlı türk halk edebiyatı antolojisi, Ararat Yaynevi, İstanbul, 1968.
\textsuperscript{87} Hikâye: Turkish folk romance as performance Art, Indiana University Press, IN, 2008; Başgöz’s student Kemal Sıray’s scholar interest is even more removed from the aşık tradition. See Sıray’s personal webpages: \url{http://mypage.iu.edu/~ksilay/}, \url{http://www.indiana.edu/~ceus/faculty/silay.shtml}, etc., as retrieved on Dec. 29\textsuperscript{th}, 2015.
\textsuperscript{88} For Example, an edited edition of Azerbaijani scholar Əhliman Axundov’s Azərbaycan aşıqları və el
narrative- or music- oriented. Among the contemporary Turkish specialists on the aşık tradition, Şükrü Elçin, Erman Artun, Doğan Kaya, Süleyman Şenel are productive authors, whose research often covers aspects of literature, music, performance, social impact, etc.

Aşıq studies in Azerbaijan can be traced back to the 1920s. In the early decades, it seems that aşiq study in Azerbaijan focused on collecting aşiq compositions. From the 1950s on, important titles began that dealt with the general features of the Azerbaijani aşiq tradition. The first to be mentioned should be Həmid Araslı’s Aşıq composition, which provides a chronological line of compositions in the genre. It can be classed as the most comprehensive introduction to Azerbaijani aşiq literature of its generation. But before moving to Azerbaijani aşiq studies after 1970s, it is worth mentioning that most monographs on Azerbaijani-Armenian literature relations appear during 1950s to 1970s: Gurgen Antonyan’s Literary relations between the Armenian and Azerbaijani peoples, Ökbər Yerevanlı’s Armeno-Azerbaijani oral literature relations and Azerbaijani-Armenian literary relations, Mirəli Seyidov’s

---


91 For example, H. Əliyazə ed., Azərbaycan aşıqları, Azərənəş, Baku, 1929. There might be a few works on the general characters of Azerbaijani aşıq tradition; but unfortunately the dissertation’s author so far has not seen the early documents earlier than 1940s.

93 Erman-İzberbaycan şəfiəli xalq adəbi şərəqləri, Hayəstan Naşiriyəti, Yerevan, 1958
94 Azər-İzbermani adəbi şərəqəli, Hayəstan Naşiriyəti, Yerevan, 1968, which includes a lengthy chapter on Armenian aşıləs composing in Azeri in the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries.
Azerbaijani-Armenian literary relations: the medieval centuries, Yusif Ramazanov’s Armenian aşıqs composing in Azeri: nineteenth century, etc. It is, perhaps only in this period, when the focal point of Soviet internal national policy was to promote the policy of Druzhba Narodov, that the political atmosphere was most suitable for the creation of these monographs.

From the 1970s to the present, quite a few good monographs on Azerbaijani aşıq literature have been published; e.g.: Qara Namazov’s The Azerbaijan aşıq art, which deals with the history of the Azerbaijani aşıq tradition and its artistic features; and much later, Aşıqs: book of biographical knowledge, which is rather a complete bibliographical dictionary of Azerbaijani aşıqs; Məhərrəm Qasımlı’s The ozan aşıq art, which is a good introduction to the origin and history of the Azerbaijani aşıq tradition and its various regional styles; Mürsəl Həkimov’s The poetics of aşıq art, which is one of the most comprehensive monographs published in post-Soviet Azerbaijan, covering a range of topics from the history of the Azerbaijani aşıq tradition, and its connection with classical literature, folklore, folk ceremonies, and lyrical and narrative contents, to its poetic forms and prosody.

Section 4 Studies of early modern Armenian elevated poetry

---

95 Azərbaycan-Ərmən adəbi əlaqələr: orta əsrər, Elm, Baku, 1976
97 Azərbaycan aşıq sonatı, Yazıcı, Baku, 1984.
98 Aşıqlar: biografik məlumat kitabı; so far at least the first volume has been published: Səda, Baku, 2004.
100 Aşıq sonatinin poetikası, Sada, Baku, 2004.
Two monographs on the history of Armenian literature deal extensively with this period. The former is Manuk Abelyan’s *History of ancient Armenian literature*; and the latter, Henrik Baxč`ınyan’s *Armenian literature of the seventeenth-eighteenth centuries*. The poetry of that period is treated by Hasmik Sahakyan in two important volumes with the same title *Late medieval Armenian poetry (sixteenth-seventeenth century)*. The first of these from 1975 is a study, while the second from 1986-87 is a comprehensive collection of contemporary poems. Another collection of four early modern Armenian poets was prepared by Hamazasp Oskanean.

Of the more important poets who enjoy individual volumes of their work, one might mention: Grigoris AƗt`amarc`i (late fifteenth to early sixteenth century catholicos of AƗt`amar); Yovasap‘ Sebastac`i (first half of the sixteenth century); Zak`aria Gnuneč`i (pupil of Grigoris AƗt`amarc`i); Nersēs Mokac`i (ecclesiastic during the late sixteenth and early seventeenth centuries); Martiros Łrimec`i (accomplished seventeenth century Armenian ecclesiastic); Eremia K`čōmiwrč`ean (important seventeenth century Armenian lay cultural figure in

---


Constantinople); Nağaš Yovnat’ an (painter as well as possibly ašuƗ, one time court poet in Tiflis, already often compared with Sayat’-Nova);\textsuperscript{109} Paftasar Dpir (important eighteenth century Constantinople Armenian cultural figure);\textsuperscript{110} Sargis Apuč’exc’i (comparatively minor poet in late seventeenth and early eighteenth centuries);\textsuperscript{111} and finally Petros Łap’anc’i (one of the last main eighteenth century poets composing in classical Armenian).\textsuperscript{112}

Section 5 Studies of early modern Persian poetry

This literature review focuses on the study of so-called “Indian style”, or “Isfahani style”, the prevailing type of elevated poetry composed in Classical Persian, Safavid Azeri, and Ottoman Turkish in both the Ottoman and Safavid domains in the early modern period. Under the impact of new movement of bāzgasht-i adabī or “literary return”, which praised the styles of pre-sixteenth century Persian poetry, an important trend from the mid-eighteenth century on, in Iran only, the Indian style fell out of fashion and sometimes became the target of derision or attack. In the Ottoman Empire, however, its popularity survived for longer.

Due to that later belittlement, which continued well into the second half of the twentieth century, most Iranian and foreign scholars tended to neglect or make

\textsuperscript{109} Asatur Mnač’akanyan; Šušanik Nazaryan: Nağaš Hovnat’an: Banastelcut’yunner, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1951.


\textsuperscript{111} Manik Mkrtč’yan: Sargis Apuč’exc’i: usumnasirat’yun ev bnagir, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’utyun, Yerevan, 1971.

\textsuperscript{112} Šušanik Nazaryan: Petros Łap’anc’i, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’utyun, Yerevan, 1969.
negatively comments on the “Indian style”, which is unmistakably reflected in E. G. Browne’s *A Literary History of Persia*, Muḥammad Tāqī Bahār’s comments, and is still largely attested in Dhabīḥ-Allāh Ṣafā’s *History of Literature in Iran* and the section “Persian literature in the Safavid period” Ṣafā wrote for the *Cambridge History of Iran*.114

From the 1950s, however, first foreign scholars then their Iranian colleagues have begun to display renewed interest in the “Indian style”. In 1958, Alessandro Bausani published an article “Contributo a una definizione dello ‘stile indiano’ della poesia persiana” (Contribution to a definition of the “Indian style” in Persian poetry), in which “he attempted to figure out the characteristics of this style that went beyond simply cataloging verbal usage”. In 1973, Wilhelm Heinz published a monograph exclusively dedicated to the “Indian style”.116

Ehsan Yarshater exhibited interest and insight on the formation of the “Indian style” already in his *Persian poetry in the era of Shāhrukh*, first published in 1955. In *Persian Literature*, he provides a good general view of the “Indian style”, not only about its situation in Safavid Iran, but in Moghul India and Ottoman Turkey as well.118

From the 1980s on, more monographs on the “Indian style” appeared in Iran; for

---

113 For example in his *Sabkshinasī*, vol. 1, chapter 22.
114 *Cambridge History of Iran*, vol. 6, pp. 948-964.
example, Muḥammad Riżā Shafīʿī Kadkanī’s *Persian literature (belles-lettres) from the
time of Jāmī to the present day*\(^\text{119}\) and *Poetics under the attack of critics: literature
criticism in the Indian style*;\(^\text{120}\) Ḥasanpūr Ālāshtī’s *New trend: style studies of ghazals
in the Indian style*.\(^\text{121}\)

Since the “Indian style” continued in the Ottoman Empire, which ruled part of
historical Armenia and Georgia in the early modern period, an investigation of the
Ottoman elevated poetic tradition is in order. Granted the dearth of material in major
Western languages, it is still necessary to consult Gibb’s *A history of Ottoman Poetry*\(^\text{122}\)
and the second volume of *Philologiae Turcicae Fundamenta* on literature of Turkic
peoples, in addition to new publications like Walter G. Andrews’ *Poetry’s Voice,
Society’s Song: Ottoman Lyric Poetry*.\(^\text{123}\) Many articles on the “Indian style” in
Ottoman literature have appeared in Turkish, as, for example, Ozan Yılmaz’s “Indian
style or Turkish style?” (Sebk-i Hindi mi, Sebk-i Türki mi?) in *Türk adebiyatı aylık fikir
ve sanat dergisi*, November 2006, issue 397.

\(^{120}\) *Shā`irī dar hujūm-i muntaqidān : naqd-i adabī dar sabk-i Hindī*, Āgah, Tehran, 1996.
\(^{122}\) Gibb, Elias John Wilkinson: *A history of Ottoman Poetry*, in 6 vol.s, Luzac, London, 1\(^{\text{st}}\) ed., 1900-
Chapter 2

The bardic Tradition and Sayat’-Nova’s Profile

Section 1 Profile of the bardic tradition

Sources about the bardic tradition, especially before the seventeenth century, are deplorably poor and the situation does not significantly improve until the nineteenth century, when modern scholarly practices were introduced into the area. Therefore, much concerning the bardic tradition during the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries has to be pieced together or even conjectured from later sources, which inevitably raises certain questions about the reliability of the resulting construction. The musical aspect of the bardic art constitutes a separate field and will not feature prominently in this study.¹

A. Origin and Etymology

As explained at the opening of Chapter 1, the ašuƗ/aşık/aşıq type of bard is associated with a composite performing art, a unity of narration and song to instrumental accompaniment with the appropriate use of gesture. As constituted in the sixteenth century, this tradition is characterized by a Turkic matrix. However, the term ašuƗ/aşık/aşıq derives from the Arabic form ‘āšiq (“lover”), the Armenian form ašuƗ

emerging from a Turkic intermediary. İlhan Başgöz adduces an important source, which provides grounds for speculating on the possibility of a secular Arab prefiguration of the later bardic tradition. This is found in the Kitāb al-Fihrist, composed in 987 CE by the Arab bibliographer Ibn al-Nadîm (ca. 935-990/1). The eighth chapter of the work deals with “the names of passionate lovers during the pre-Islamic period and the period of Islam about whose historical traditions there were books”. According to his explanation, these “passionate lovers (ʿushshāq in Arabic, the plural of ʿāshiq)” refer to “tribal minstrels called ʿāshiq”, who performed “the life stories, legendary or real (or a mixture of both), of the Arab minstrels.”

Though this tradition was in circulation in the pre-Islamic and early Islamic periods, so far no record of it has been found postdating Ibn al-Nadîm in the tenth century, while the current bardic tradition originates in the sixteenth century. Despite the time gap, this new approach raises important issues regarding the origin of the tradition, which merits further investigation.

In his monograph Hikâye Başgöz also contextualizes the ašuƗ/aşık/aşıq genre within the development of earlier romance, epic- and story-telling traditions in the Near East. In addition to the Arabic maddāḥ and Persian naqqāl traditions, another important trajectory is sketched by bards of the Parthian gösān type widely disseminated

---


in the Persian and Armenian realms in the Late Antique period and beyond.\(^5\) In the Armenian sphere the parallel term gusan is attested into the fifteenth century,\(^6\) at which point certain practitioners of the art are referred to by the Turkic form ozan, which was later used to refer to the aşık as well.\(^7\) Despite certain linguistic problems with the reconstruction, attempts have been made to derive the latter term from the former.\(^8\) Başgöz joins the discussion,\(^9\) arguing that, since the ozan tradition bears many similarities with that of the gusan, the terms may share the same etymology, and offering his interpretation of the stages in the process.

Since bardic storytelling (hikâye) consists of prose narration interspersed with rhymed songs, it is useful to examine earlier examples of such techniques already extant in the Near East. These include *The Arabian Nights* and the related Armenian *Kafa* tradition, which flourished from around the thirteenth to the seventeenth centuries.\(^10\) These traditions may afford more plausible and immediate connections with the bardic tradition than those often highlighted but of more distant origin.

Previous scholarship tended to identify the aşul/aşık/aşiq bard as an offspring of the Central Asian Turkic minstrel tradition,\(^11\) associating this with the epic tradition of

---

\(^{5}\) For the Parthian gusan tradition, see Mary Boyce, “The Parthian gōsān and Iranian Minstrel Tradition,” *JRAS*, 1957, pp. 10-45.

\(^{6}\) It is difficult to provide first-hand material on this issue. However, since Arak’el Sivnee’i used awzan=ozan in his treaties rather than gusan, one might conjecture that the latter term was not in circulation at that time. See Cowe, 1995, p. 43.

\(^{7}\) Köprülü, “Ozan”, p. 144.

\(^{8}\) Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 105.

\(^{9}\) Başgöz, 2001, p. 234.


\(^{11}\) Fuad Köprülü, “Ozan”, included in *Edebiyat araştırmaları,* Türk Tarih Kurumu Basmevi, Ankara, 1966, pp. 131-144, Başgöz, “From Gosan to Ozan”, *Turcica*, vol. 38, 2001, pp. 229-235. It should be mentioned that the word ozan survived quite tenaciously into the eighteenth century, since famous aşık Karacaoğlan was called an ozan in a song from 1707. See Cahit Öztelli, *Karacaoğlan, Bütün şıirleri,*
that region, and ultimately, Shamanism. Here, too, Başgöz has weighed in on the debate, arguing against the suggested parallels between shamans and aşıks. According to him, the aşık does not share the same or similar character traits to troubled individuals, as has been postulated for shamans. Nor does the aşık’s dream or selection of his profession parallel the shaman’s initiatory dreams and ceremony to cure mental illness. Another essential aspect underexplored by proponents of a Central Asian origin is that in much of the literature supporting this view, the storytelling aspect of the tradition, as opposed to the very different style of epic declamation, lacks a comprehensive treatment.

In this connection, some scholars actually applied the term “aşık traditions” to storytelling among the various Turkic peoples in general, as, for example, the Kazakh and Kyrgyz aqyn. Yet this categorization is questionable, since, even if these traditions share a common origin with the aşık/aşıq tradition, if we accept the arguments regarding Shamanism and epic, they nevertheless mapped out their own distinct route of development over several centuries and do not necessarily maintain many common religious, thematic, prosodic, or musicological features. Hence, there is no documentation on the Kazakh and Kyrgyz aqyns, for example, engaging in the

---

13 Başgöz, 2008, pp. 94-95.
15 An example of such broad definition can be found in Artun, 2011, pp. 26-29.
performance of prose narrative rather than singing or chanting to instrumental accompaniment. Moreover, the content of their narratives is predominantly epic, while in the aşık/aşıq bardic tradition the themes are overwhelmingly romantic.\(^\text{16}\)

Most scholars agree now that the aşuƗ/aşık/aşıq tradition established itself by the sixteenth century when records of such bards begin to appear.\(^\text{17}\) To support this view, both Boratav and Başgöz\(^\text{18}\) have formed their respective arguments on this formation. Boratav’s approach is very innovative. He bases his argumentation on the evolution of poetic forms. According to him, an important support is the significant circulation of the 11-syllable line koşma, which is enormously popular among aşıks, at the turn of the sixteenth century, though it is rarely recorded in the early period.\(^\text{19}\)

Returning to issues of nomenclature, there is a widespread view associating the application of the term aşuƗ/aşık/aşıq to bards within the Muslim Sufi mystical tradition.\(^\text{20}\) After the rise of Sufism, the term’s reference to Sufi practitioners was transferred to bards, since according to Sufi mystical philosophy they are lovers, whose love is God. This usage continues today among various Sufi orders. Even for secular bards the title *Hak aşık/Həqq aşıq* “God’s lover”\(^\text{21}\) or *Hak Aşıği* “God-inspired lover-poet”\(^\text{22}\) is bestowed on those virtuosi, as had been used among Sufi aşık/aşıqs to

---

\(^\text{16}\) Chadwick and Zhirmunsky, 2010, p. 316.
\(^\text{17}\) As reflected in the respective monographs of Köprülüt, Günay, Artun, Sahakyan, Qasımlı, all holding this view.
\(^\text{18}\) Both Boratav and Başgöz regard the aşık tradition as part of folk literature, which seems the general opinion among Turkish scholars. This issue will be reviewed at the end of this section.
\(^\text{20}\) For example, İlhan Başgöz, *Hikâye: Turkish Folk Romance as Performance Art*, Special Publications of the Folklore Institute No. 7, Indiana University, Bloomington, IN, 2008, *passim*.
\(^\text{21}\) For the Turkish title, see Başgöz, 2008, p. 9 and, for the Azeri one, see Mahərrəm Qasımlı, *Ozan aşıq sanətə*,UGH, Baku, 2003, pp. 89-117.
\(^\text{22}\) For this title, see Başgöz, 2008, p. 197.
address themselves.\textsuperscript{23}

The nineteenth-century growth of nationalism in the Ottoman and Tsarist Russian domains and its tenth-century developments in the Turkish Republic and USSR have spurred a widespread movement among Armenians, Turks, and Azerbaijanis alike to replace the lingering foreign connotations of the Arabic term ašuƗ/aşık/aşıq with “native” terms in their own languages pertaining to earlier bardic traditions. In the Armenian case, the alternative is gusan, while in Turkey and Azerbaijan that of ozan as well as saz şair (saz\textsuperscript{24} poet), halk şair (folk poet) and less frequently, müğənni (singer), el şair (folk singer), etc. Ironically, the term gusan is ultimately Parthian; while the forms şair, müğənni etc. are Arabic.

The bardic tradition used to be found over a vast geographic expanse mostly inhabited by the Oghuz Turks, roughly from the Balkans to Iran,\textsuperscript{25} however, the focus of this study will be primarily Anatolia and Southern Caucasus and, to a less degree, Iranian Azerbaijan, due to the availability of materials and their historical importance.\textsuperscript{26}

B. An overview of the history of the bardic tradition in the target region

It is regrettable that biographical materials regarding bards tend to be rather sparse,

\textsuperscript{23} Başgöz, 2008, p. 9.
\textsuperscript{24} The saz is the most important musical instrument in the bardic tradition.
\textsuperscript{26} It also briefly covers Algiers, once the major base of Ottoman navy in West Mediterranean, and Georgia where bardic tradition had a tiny branch will be mentioned only when necessary. For a brief reference, see Valeh Hacılar, “Türkçe söleyen Gürcü Aşık-şairleri”, \textit{Bizim Ahıska}, 10 (2011), pp. 40-44; Ilyas Üstünyer, “Tradition of the Ashugh poetry and Ashughs in Georgia”, \textit{IBSU Scientific Journal}, 2009, 1(3), pp. 137-149.
particularly for the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries, so that the main source for data on them is the text of their songs. In this they differ from elevated poets, whose biographies can be found in *tezkire* collections (memorandum, memoir) in Turkish or the lives (vark*) and manuscript colophons of ecclesiastics, who largely filled the ranks of Early Modern Armenian literati. Another complicating factor is that several bards share the same professional name. Thus, there may be at least two Turkish aşıks from different centuries and different locations known by the name Karacaoğlan.²⁷ Evidence includes anecdotes circulating in the area where a bard flourished and references in later bards’ narratives or songs about their illustrious predecessors, such songs comprising the tiny sub-genre of bardic songs called şairname (record of poets) in Turkish.²⁸ Other materials include tangible objects related to them, such as tombstones, manuscripts, etc. In contrast, evidence for the development of the bardic tradition in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries is much more profuse, and often serves as the only basis for reconstructing aspects of the earlier period. The overview of the tradition that follows loosely narrates the history of the genre by century without intending any rigid application of that timeframe.

1. 1500-1600

     This century is generally regarded by scholars as the era when the bardic tradition

---

²⁷ There are different opinions about how many Karacaoğlans there may have been. See Cahit Öztelli, *Karacaoğlan, Bütün şiirleri*, Milliyet Yayınları, Istanbul, 1971, pp. XIII-XXIII, which argues for the single authorship of the songs in the collection. See also Umay Günay, *Türkiye’de Aşık tarzı şıiri geleneği ve rüya motifü*, 3rd ed., Akçağ, Ankara, 1999, pp. 185-214, where two different aşık Karacaoğlans from different centuries and origin are differentiated.

²⁸ The same term is also used in the sense of tezkire as well. According to Artun, the first şairnames date back to the seventeenth century (Artun, 2011, p. 303).
ultimately took shape.\textsuperscript{29} The Ottoman navy and army as well as Sufi tekkes are the main institutions from this period that preserve the works of contemporary Turkish aşıks. Much of the naval material derives from Algiers, the Ottoman navy’s major base in the West.\textsuperscript{30} From the scarce record of these early aşıks, we learn that those aşıks served in this navy and were regularly required to perform to improve the sailors’ morale.\textsuperscript{31} Information also exists about bardic activity in Anatolia and Azerbaijan. Several of the Turkic aşık/aşıqs there have explicit military affiliations, as can be seen from their works, either as soldiers or officers in the Ottoman army or Celali rebels,\textsuperscript{32} who were Alevites with Shiite affinities and hence hostile to the former group. A second strain of Eastern aşıks bore strong links to Sufism, e.g. Pir Sultan Abdal in Anatolia, who was an Alevi;\textsuperscript{33} and Aşıq Qurbani from the Safavid sphere, who is said to have been at the court of Safavid Shah Ismail for a while and has songs in fervent praise of Shah Ismail Khaṭā‘ī.\textsuperscript{34} Later, such famous early aşıks, as well as Shah Khaṭā‘ī, were to become the subject of aşık songs and heroic or romantic tales, though much of the data

\textsuperscript{29} Various titles, for example, Köprülü, 1962-1965, p. 39 and Artun, 2011, pp. 273-274.

\textsuperscript{30} In Köprülü’s collection, 5 out of 11 aşıks from this period were navy aşıks. See Köprülü, 1962-1965, pp. 59-64.

\textsuperscript{31} Ibid.

\textsuperscript{32} The Celâlî rebellions were a series of Alevi resistance movements against the Ottoman authorities in Anatolia in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, of which the first broke out in 1519 under the leadership of Celal, an Alevi preacher. See Türkiye Diyanet Vakfı İslâm Ansiklopedisi Genel Müdürlüğü: Türkiye Diyanet Vakfı İslâm ansiklopedisi, Üsküdar, Istanbul, vol. 7, 1993, pp. 252-257.

\textsuperscript{33} Very little is known about his life, except stories and his poetry, in which he always turns out to be an Alevi, participating in the Alevi revolt against the Ottoman Empire under the influence and instigation of the Safavids. See: Artun, 2011, pp. 286-289.

\textsuperscript{34} Very little is known about his life. Though he was probably born in a village called Diri, its exact location is still not very clear. Qozanfar Kazimov, his editor, claims it should be in what is now the Azerbaijani Republic, while others argue for a location currently in Iranian Azerbaijan. See: Qozanfar Kazimov, Qurbani, Bakı Universiteti Naşriyyatı, 1990, pp. 4-20; Ohlíman Axundov et al. ed. in Azeri; Saim Sakaoğlulu et al. ed. in Turkish, Azerbaycan aşıkları ve el şiirleri, vol. 1, Halk Kültürü, İstanbul, 1985, p.1. For the fervent paean for Shah Ismail Khaṭā‘ī, see: Kazimov, 1990, p. 53.
in these works is fictional.\textsuperscript{35} From the sixteenth century onwards, the center for aşıq activity in the Iran was Tabriz, center of the Azerbaijan region, an early Safavid power base, and an important longstanding center of international trade. The first Armenian aşılı, Nahapet K’uč’ak,\textsuperscript{36} from Xaṙakunis in the Lake Van area also flourished in this century, of whose Turkish compositions about ten songs in standard aşılı meters are transmitted, treating themes common in Armenian aşılı literature.\textsuperscript{37} Apart from Nahapet K’uč’ak we also hear of the activities of other contemporary Armenian bards like aşılı Mesihi.\textsuperscript{38}

2. 1600-1700

Fuad Köprüllü designated the seventeenth century as the “golden age” of the Turkish aşık tradition\textsuperscript{39} granted the emergence of exponents from a large geographical range and more diversified background. These included at least two of the most prolific and most accomplished pre-nineteenth century Turkish bards, Aşık Gevheri\textsuperscript{40} and Aşık Ömer\textsuperscript{41} who adopted not only the ‘arûd quantitative meters but also the style of the

\textsuperscript{35} For the plots of these stories, see Appendix A: Plot outlines of fifty hikaye romances, \textit{Hikâyê}, pp. 217-285.


\textsuperscript{37} His tombstone used to be found in the graveyard of S. T’ecdoros Monastery in his home village Xaṙakunis, which bore his name and the year of death: 1592. See Nairi Zaryan’s account in Hrant T’amrazyan ed., \textit{Nahapet K’uč’ aki banasteƗcakan aşxarbê}, Erevan Petakan Hamalsarani Hratarakć’ut’yun, Yerevan, 2001, pp. 117-118.

\textsuperscript{38} One of exceptions is aşılı Mesihi, on whom, see Köprüllü: “Türk edebiyatinin Ermeni edebiyati üzerindeki tesirleri”, in \textit{Edebiyat araştırmaları}, 1966, pp. 263-264.

\textsuperscript{39} Köprüllü, 1966, p. 209.

\textsuperscript{40} Little is certain about him apart from data in some of his songs, such as one welcoming the Crimean Khan Selim Giray I to Constantinople, which was written in 1100 A. H./1688-1689 C. E. See Şükru Elçin, \textit{Gevherî Divânt}, Ankara Üniversitesi Basımevi, Ankara, 1984, pp. 11-19 and Artun, 2011, pp. 311-312.

\textsuperscript{41} Little is certain about him except that he thrived in this century. This situation is true even in the most comprehensive collection of his works. See Sadeddin Nüzhet Ergün, \textit{Âşık Ömer, Hayâtı ve şiirleri}, Semih Lüfi Matbaasıve Kitap Evi, 1936, pp. 5-14. An brief updated description can be found in
divan literature tradition and became the most prolific and successful among their peers. Sources for aşuƗ/ aşıqs in the Iranian domain, however, are relatively few. Two famous Azerbaijani aşıqs flourished in this century: Abbas Tufarğanlı and Sarı Aşıq. This century also witnessed the appearance of Łul Egaz and Łul Arzuni, the first Armenian aşuƗs from the important town of New Julfa across the river from the Safavid capital of Isfahan, where they were born in the 1650s. They are also the first extant aşuƗs composing in the Armenian language, which thrived in the context of the cosmopolitan atmosphere associated with the international trade network created by the wealthy Armenian khojas. Meanwhile, in the Ottoman Empire, Armenian aşuƗs like Vartan and Civan composed songs in Turkish. Unfortunately, records for them are even more meager than those concerning Iranian Armenian bards.

3. 1700-1820s

Here it is appropriate to extend the period to the 1820s to include two watershed events, the annihilation of the Janissaries in Constantinople in 1826 and the completion of the Russian annexation of the Southern Caucasia, marked by the treaty of

42 Little is known about his life except his birthplace, the village of Tufargañ (close to Tabriz), as reflected in his professional name. See Dadaşzada, Araz: Abbas Tufarğanlı: 72 şe’r, Gənəlik, Bakı, 1973, p. 3.
43 Little is known about his life except that his tomestone was discovered in Karabak in 1927. See further Axundov, Sakaoglu et al., 1985, vol. 1, p. 41.
44 Born in the 1650s, little is sure about his life, except that he was circuiting among the Armenian villages around Isfahan with his musical instrument, the chongur; and his tombstone was in the Armenian cemetery there, erected in 1734. See Aram Eremean, Parskahay aşıdner, Tiflis, 1930, pp. 2-3.
45 He was a contemporary of Łul Egaz. But he spent much of his life in Kolkata, India. See Eremean, 1930, pp. 12-13.
Turkmenchay of 1828, both of which exerted an important influence on the development of the subsequent tradition.

This period tends to be regarded as a stagnant period for the Turkish aşık tradition by modern Turkish scholars. Although aşıks appeared from every social background as in the previous century, and more of their names and works have come down to us thanks to their inclusion from this point in tezkires or şairnames, none were as prolific or accomplished as Karacaoğlan, Gevheri, or Ömer. Another noteworthy phenomenon is the expanded influence of classical Persian and Turkish poetry on contemporary Turkish aşıks expressed in the use of tropes, allusions, and other literary devices along with the ʿarūḍ quantitative prosody alongside syllabic prosody.

Across the border in the Iranian sphere of Azerbaijan and South Caucasia, the Azeri aşıq tradition echoes the Ottoman. Famous new aşıqs, for example, Xəsta Qasim appeared in this century, whose life became a theme for later aşiq songs, like Qurbani or Abbas Tufarğanlı in previous centuries. However, their number is less than in the previous century.

The situation is quite different in the case of Armenians. Not only do we have more records of Armenian aşuƗs like the Turks and Azeris, but we observe that they span a much larger geographical are from Constantinople to the Armenian Plateau, then on to Isfahan and its surrounding Armenian communities, as well as Tiflis, the three capital cities functioning as centers of Armenian aşuƗ activities. Moreover, Armenian aşuƗs

49 Like the famous Azeri aşıqs mentioned earlier, there is little known about his life except that his hometown is Tikmadaj not far from Tabriz. His tomestone is also found in the cemetery there. See Hüseyn İsmayılov et al., Xəsta Qasım, Nurlan, Baki, 2010, pp. 3-4.
have left a more multilingual corpus of composition now embracing not only Turkish and Armenian, but also Georgian and (in very rare cases) Persian. Similarly, the background of those Armenian aşuƗs is much diversified. Apart from those with an affiliation to the Armenian Apostolic Chrisitans, a few were followers of the Alevi-Bektaşi Sufi order, or at least held a syncretic creed uniting elements of Christianity and Alevism.\textsuperscript{50} Probably partly due to the sheer number of Armenian aşuƗs known to us from this century, their compositions comprise more topics in more diversified styles as well. Many Armenian aşuƗs from this century seem to have secured their places in modern publications of Armenian literature, e.g. Yart`un-ŎƗli,\textsuperscript{51} NaƗaš Yovnaŧ an,\textsuperscript{52} Šamč`i Melk`ŏ,\textsuperscript{53} and finally, Sayat`-Nova.

4. 1820s-1920s

The bardic tradition in this period reflects the change witnessed in the political, military, and cultural history of the region These were associated with the introduction

\textsuperscript{50} The Bektaşis like the Mevlevis are quite open to people of all confessions. Therefore participation in their activities cannot be used as an exclusive proof of participants' religious belief.\textsuperscript{51} Born as Yovhannēs Yarut`iwnean in the 1760s in a peasant family in the village of Asadabad in the Ç`armahal district of Isfahan province, he went to the village school, then learned the aşuƗ art from aşuƗ Łul Yovhannēs (c. 1740-1834, the death date is according to his tombstone in the Armenian cemetery in New Julfa: Aug. 16, 1840. See Aram Ereemean, \textit{AşıƗ Lul Yovhannēs}, S. Lazar, Venice, 1929, pp. 7-8.), and superseded his master. For a better education, he went to Ejmiacin for some years during his wandering, and claimed that he received divine revelation as a qualified aşuƗ from S. Karapet (St. John the Predecessor) during his pilgrimage to the S. Karapet Monastery in Mush, which tradition would be explained further later. He died in 1840, and his tombstone is found in the cemetery of Mamuk`a village, Ç`armahal. See Aram Ereemean, \textit{AşıƗ Yart`un ÖƗli}, 2\textsuperscript{nd} ed., Karō AşıƗean, Tehran, 1946, pp. 7-14.\textsuperscript{52} Born in the village of Şo祐t`, Agulis, Nakhichevan in 1661, he was invited to Tiflis by Vakhtang VI, king of Kartli, as court singer and painter between 1703-1712, but returned to Agulis at an unknown time for unknown reasons. He died before Oct. 28, 1722, since his son composed an elegy him at his tomb on that day. See Asatur Mnac`akanyan and Šušanik Nazaryan, \textit{NaƗaš Hovnaŧ an: banastecut yunner}, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakčʻutʻyun, Yerevan, 1951, pp. V-VII.\textsuperscript{53} Little is sure about his life. He might have been born in the 1750s and died after 1821. He called himself as from Tiflis, was an eyewitness to Agha Muhammad Khan's conquest and destruction of Tiflis, when his father Bežan was killed and presented “serfs” to Ejmiacin in 1801. See Levon Melik`set `-Bek, Šamč`i-Melk`on ev nra hayeren xalërẽ, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakčʻut’yun, Yerevan, 1958, pp. 5-15.
of much more powerful Western influence in part connected with Russian expansion
and the incorporation of Southern Caucasus area, though the pace of change varied.

The demise of the Ottoman navy, the loss of Maghreb and the disbandment of the
Janissaries and ensuing military reorganization led to the rapid decline of military aşık

In contrast, bardic associations in Constantinople and Alekşandrapol \(^{54}\) formed
themselves into professional organizations with a guild structure. Meanwhile, a number
of bardic centers were established in various areas, many of which continued into the
next century, as observed from the records adduced in twentieth-century monographs.

Another striking development is that especially in the Russian sphere, under the impact
of nationalism, Armenian aşuƗs established an Armenian “national” aşuƗ tradition
distinguished by the promotion of Armenian language in their compositions, gradually
leading to a reduction in the use of Turkic dialects. \(^{55}\) Another characteristic of this
period was the inauguration of modern scholarly bardic studies started, as reviewed in
the first chapter.

Though some Turkish scholars view the period as a second “golden age” of
Turkish aşık art,\(^ {56}\) others consider it the beginning of its decline.\(^ {57}\) Moved by personal
tast, the consecutive sultans from Selim III (r.1789-1807) to Abdülaziz (r. 1861-1876),
including Mahmud II (r. 1808-1839), who extended patronage to several secular aşiks

\(^{55}\) See Yusif Ramazanov, Azərbaycan dilində yazıl-b-yaradan erməni aşıqları: XIX əsr, Elm, Baku,
1976. I was also informed personally by scholars in Baku about a contemporary Iranian Armenian aşuf
from the Urmia region still composing in Azeri. Azerbaijani National Academy of Science, Jun. 5,
2011.
\(^{56}\) Mehmet Yardımcı, Başlangıçdan günümüze halk şiri, aşık şiri, tekke şiri, Ürün Yayınları,
\(^{57}\) Artun, 2011, p. 333.
in Constantinople for a good time in this period. Sultan Mahmud II established a formal organization for aşıks in Constantinople. However, certain scholars maintain that after the reign of these sultans the aşık tradition began to lose its importance in cities. Moreover, though aşık art aroused more interest from learned circles in the Tanzimat era (1839-1876), the coffee house in the capital that used to be part of a Janissary monopoly until the latter’s disbandment in 1826 and dominated by aşık performance, evolved into the semâî kahvehane (cabaret coffee house). People from other backgrounds, especially traditional fire fighters and hoodlums gained the monopoly of those venues. Songs composed by these two groups of city dwellers were made up of manis and semais, in contrast to the aşıks’ more diversified repertoire. This led to the collapse of aşık song genres, and might be regarded as a prefiguration of the general decline of the aşık tradition in the Ottoman Empire and future Turkish Republic. During the reign of Sultan Abdülhamid II (1876-1908), alafranka, or Western-fashioned music was provided in semâî kahvehanes as well, which might be regarded as a sign of the further decline of traditional aşık performance. After his deposition in 1908 these semâî kahvehanes began to decline as well as part of a process, which came to an end at around 1920. Scholars from this period Rıza Tevfik, Ziya Gökalp and Fuad Köprülü, who

59 Artun, ibid..
60 These people, called tulumbacı or “pump man” in Turkish, were not modern fire fighters, but rather belonged to a tradition developed locally.
61 Artun, 2011, p. 333.
62 Two genres of aşık songs.
63 (1869-1949), later with the surname Bölükbaşı, Turkish scholar, politician, philosopher and leader of a sect of the Bektashi community.
64 (1876-1924), Turkish scholar, writer, thinker and political activist, one of the first advocates for Turkish nationalism.
were often writers and social activists simultaneously, paid much attention to the aşıks and their art. Under the strong influence of nationalism, and dissatisfied with divan literature, which in form and language bore the ubiquitous influence of classical Arabic and Persian literature, these nineteenth-century Turkish intellectuals attempted to create a new national literature in an idiom closer to the language of the people. In this regard, aşık literature naturally attracted them.\textsuperscript{65}

Azerbaijan and Southern Caucasia, both Iranian until the Russo-Persian wars, now bifurcate. The territory belonging to modern Iran is badly served by accessible historical data, while material published in Soviet Azerbaijan and now the independent Republic of Azerbaijan only sporadically covers the situation in Iran.\textsuperscript{66} As a result, it is largely omitted from my study. Even for Russian Transcaucasia, available sources are too sparse to create a connected narrative.\textsuperscript{67} Judging from the few references I have assembled, artistically it seems it remained on the old track, though with innovations and expansion in contents and a certain exposure to elevated literature into sight as well.\textsuperscript{68} Trends in the development of the Armenian aşıl tradition in the Russian Empire domain, though pursuing a parallel path to those among the Azerbaijanis, embraced more innovative or modernizing steps. This was associated with the greater

---

\textsuperscript{65} Fuad Köprüülü, 1966, p. 225 and Boratav’s contribution to \textit{Philologiae Turcicae Fundamenta}, vol. 2, 1964, pp. 143-144.

\textsuperscript{66} It seems the situation is getting improved in the post-Soviet period, together with the enhanced Azeri-Iranian cultural exchange. News covering Iran on the website of Union of Azerbaijani Aşıqs (to be explained later in this section) can be found in ascending frequency on their website: \url{http://azab.az/xeber/?do=cat&category=xeber}, on which the latest updates are about the establishment of Union of Iranian Aşıqs in October 2015.

\textsuperscript{67} For further details, see Arasli, 1960, pp. 84-95.

\textsuperscript{68} Namazov, 1983, p. 85.
employment of Armenian language\textsuperscript{69} and ašuƗ involvement of in enlightening or nationalist trends, in which the key figure was AšuƗ Živani.\textsuperscript{70} Among those ašuƗs employing Turkic the most accomplished figure was Kʻeşiş-ölî/Keşişoğlu (1804-1872), a blind ašuƗ from Tiflis, who was later brought to Sultan Mahmud II’s court to perform in Constantinople.\textsuperscript{71}

5. From the 1920s on

In general, this period witnessed a decline of the tradition over the whole region. Western (including Russian/Soviet) influence and globalization after WWII have comprehensively transformed conditions in the area. Modern media, for example, publication, sound recording, radio, film, television and internet, have assisted in helpful in spreading the bardic tradition and making it more accessible, but also disseminate more modern cultural forms which thus compete for consumers’ time and attention. Consequently, the bardic tradition, whose aesthetic structures were fixed in past centuries, is only one of numerous traditional art forms now gradually disappearing\textsuperscript{72} first from major city centers, then regional centers, and ultimately from the rural area. Though writers of the literate tradition initially drew from it in structuring

\textsuperscript{69} The Armenian ašuƗs from Širin on began to discard Arabic, Persian, or Turkish loanwords from their compositions. They also started to translate and publish in Armenian stories that till then circulated in Turkish. See: Academy of Science, Armenian Soviet Socialist Republic, *Hay nor grakanut`yan patmut`yun*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratark`ču`t`yun; relevant chapters: Hasmik Sahakyan, “Ašulakan poezia” in vol. 1, Yerevan, 1962, pp. 269-271; Š. Grigoryan, “Ašulakan poezia” in vol. 4, Yerevan, 1972, pp. 697-698; as well as Levoyan, 1963, pp. 121-123.


\textsuperscript{72} For example, Iranian naqqāli and other story-telling traditions in the Middle East.
their plots, especially in the formative period of national literature, its older aesthetics and ethics, based on a more traditional social background differs radically from contemporary trends under the impact of the West. Consequently, this period is marked by the introduction of various measures to preserve the tradition on the part of governments or other political entities, alongside academic efforts. Nevertheless, though these efforts may succeed in propping up the tradition, the continued process of decline is inevitable.

In Turkey, the decline of the aşık tradition in the capital, which had begun in the nineteenth century was completed around 1920, and was then followed by the disappearance of aşıks from traditional ambiences first in other major cities in Western Turkey and finally in Eastern Turkey over a sixty-year process up to the 1980s. Of course aşıks are still around, some being honored by the government as distinguished artists and the recipients of financial support. Actually, politicians in Turkey representing a whole spectrum of political views have connections with aşıks. For example, the Aşık festival celebrated in Konya annually in October from 1965 was originally organized by Konya Aşıklar Derneği, the Society of Aşıks in Konya, an organization for politically more conservative aşıks, established by conservative political parties and individuals.

In Soviet Azerbaijan and the now independent Republic of Azerbaijan, the aşıq tradition has received more sustained attention from the government (as well as the

---

73 Artun, 2011, p. 41.  
75 For example, aşık Veysel. See Başgöz, 2008, p.97.  
76 Ibid..
Communist Party in the Soviet era).\textsuperscript{77} As is obvious, oversight, especially in the Soviet era, can never be divorced from political concerns. Besides the promotion of the aşıq tradition as part of Azerbaijani culture, the potential of propaganda through this art form has never been ignored. With all its positive and negative connotations, Azerbaijani aşıq art has at least benefited from financial support and a steady source for its record, study, performance, inheritance and publication. Aşıqs were absorbed into artists’ organizations, including the union of writers. Some of them won greater fame, while others were overlooked or even surpressed for political reasons.\textsuperscript{78} The aşıq tradition entered the curriculum of the Azerbaijan State University of Culture and Arts, the Azerbaijan National Conservatory, and a number of schools, while research on it has been carried out in the Azerbaijan National Academy of Sciences and other institutions.\textsuperscript{79} A special museum dedicated to the Azerbaijani aşıq tradition was established in Tovuz, a regional town in Western Azerbaijan, where the tradition has been very active and is still alive. Congresses (in Azeri: qurultay) of Azerbaijani aşıqs have been held from 1928, of which the last in the Soviet period was held in 1984. Such

\textsuperscript{77} Unfortunately, since the source for Iranian Azeri aşıqs in this period is still poor, it is omitted once again as in the last part. For relevant articles, see İlhan Başgöz, “Turkish Hikaye-telling tradition in Azerbaijan, Iran”, in Kemal Silay ed., Turkish folklore and oral literature, Indiana University Turkish Studies, Bloomington, IN, 1998, pp. 24-42; and Charlotte F. Albright: “The Azerbaijani Ashiq and His Performance of a Dastan”, \textit{Iranian Studies}, Vol. 9, No. 4 (Autumn, 1976), pp. 220-247.

\textsuperscript{78} An example of the suppressed aşıq might be Aşıq Mirza Bilal (1872-1937), who was a representative for the first Qurultay of Soviet aşıqs, but arrested during the Great Purge, and executed as an “enemy of the people.” He was only rehabilitated in 1993. See the website of Azerbaijan Aşıq Union: \url{http://azab.az/qurban/68-aedq-mirzii-bilal.html}, as retrieved on Sept. 4, 2015. Başgöz also reports an Azerbaijani aşıq fled to Turkey during WWII for political asylum, though the exact reason is unspecified. See Başgöz, 2008, p. 75.

congresses were convened under the Party’s organization with the participation of all Soviet republics with an aşıq tradition.\textsuperscript{80} From the Stalinist era on, Azerbaijani aşıqs adopted the Soviet tunic as performance attire alongside traditional costumes, which has established itself into the present.\textsuperscript{81} This epitomizes the maintenance of many Soviet institutions and practices in the Azerbaijani Republic still. Now international aşıq conferences and contests are held in Azerbaijan, with participants from Iran, Turkey, and other countries. In 2009, Azerbaijani aşıq art was officially registered by UNESCO as an item of intangible world heritage.\textsuperscript{82}

The situation in Armenia bears certain similarities with that in Azerbaijan due to parallel conditions under the Tsarist Russian and Soviet rule. Since J̌ ivani’s death no new aşuƗ has appeared of his caliber. The improvisation tradition among Armenian aşuƗs virtually came to an end with the passing of Havasi (1896-1979), the last aşuƗ born in the nineteenth century. Likewise, while the aşuƗ tradition entered the curriculum of the Komitas State Conservatory of Yerevan alongside the positive aspects of instruction and research on the tradition, the conservatory’s primary formative influence from Western art music mediated by Russian has led to the loss of an appreciation of the Near Eastern microtonic system on the part of graduates taught within the confines of the Western well-tempered major and minor scales. Again

\textsuperscript{80} For details can see: Namazov; p. 154; Eyüp Akman: “Stalin sonrası Azerbaycan’da aşık edebiyatı ve aşık kurultayları”, Türkbilg, 2008 (15), p. 20.
\textsuperscript{81} As reflected from the post-Soviet publications in Azerbaijani Republic still, available from the website of Azerbaijan Aşıq Union, passim.
probably on the model of Western orchestral structures, ašuƗ ensembles were created in the Soviet period which still enjoy immense popularity that involve groups featuring several performers on the same traditional instruments, e.g., tar, saz, santur, kamancha, kamani, tav kamani and dap to accompany ašuƗ songs in contrast to the practice in Soviet Azerbaijan, where aşıqs still perform in traditional small-scale groups. But after the collapse of the Soviet Union, due to the severe financial stress in the Armenian Republic, it is difficult for such practice to continue. Joint efforts are still being made to further promote the Armenian ašuƗ tradition, such as performances in both Armenia and abroad, saving songs from oblivion and the revival of improvisation, from scholars and musicians like T`ovma Polosyan, professor of Armenian musical folklore studies at the Komitas State Conservatory of Yerevan from 1987, founder and director of the Sayat-Nova AšuƗ Ensemble from 1992, founder of Ėivani School of AšuƗ Art from 1997, founder and chairman of Armenian AšuƗ Association in 1997. The revival effort also benefits from the support of figures like Vahagn Hovnanian, a famous diaspora Armenian entrepreneur and philanthropist, who established and funded an annual ašuƗ competition named after Sayat`-Nova in 2000.

C. The making of bards

1. Prerequisites for becoming a bard

---

83 A list of the instruments in the ensemble can be found on the introductory page to the Sayat-Nova Minstrel Song Ensemble at http://sayat-nova.org/sayat-nova-ashough-ensemble/, as retrieved on Sept. 4, 2015.
On the whole the requirements resemble those in other bardic traditions, i.e. that the candidate should possess a good memory and be able to master the art of singing and playing musical instruments (primarily strings; especially the saz). There seems no prescription regarding their family background, and only a few hailed from a well-off family while even rarer individuals could lay claim to high rank. Blind bards are found from time to time, e.g. the famous early nineteenth-century Armenian asylum Şirin or the twentieth-century Turkish aşık Veysel, but the claim by some scholars that bards were frequently blind is unsupported, as established by Garegin Levonyan’s list of Armenian aşuys up to the late nineteenth century and Erman Artun’s list of famous sixteenth-to-twentieth-centuries Turkish aşiks, most of whom do not belong to that category. On the contrary, a number of bards were orphaned at a very early age, losing at least one parent, e.g. AšuŞ Şirin and Jîvani, but here, too, it is hardly

86 Başgöz, 2008, p. 98.
87 For example, the late nineteenth-century Armenian aşuŞ Şahir-Xa’atur, on whom see Grigoryan’s chapter in: Hay nor grakanut yan patmut yun, vol. 4, 1972, p. 704, or the Turkish aşık Isha Kemali, on whom see: Başgöz, 2008, pp.72-73.
88 For example, Kul Mehmed, a sixteenth-century Turkish aşık, was born into the family of a pasha. See Köprülû, 1962-1965, pp. 59-60.
90 (1894-1973) Born in the village of Sivrialan in the Sivas province, he first attracted the attention of the local teacher Ahmet Kutsi Tecer (1901-1967, a Turkish scholar and politician) by a song composed for the tenth anniversary of the Turkish Republic, and later won nation-wide fame. See Artun, 2011, pp. 389-391.
92 Levonyan, 1892, pp. 16-132.
94 However, among the four Armenian aşuys known for their storytelling to Levonyan, three of them were blind: T’uğjar, Bangi, Feyradi (Fahrad). In the case of Abovean and von Haxthausen, the blind aşuys are reported more for their story-telling as well. Therefore, it might be possible that among the Armenian aşuys who lived more on storytelling in the 19 century, a significant percentage of them were blind. See Levonyan, 1963, pp. 109-110.
possible to draw any significant correlations between their family situation and their becoming a bard. There are reports that Armenian Christian aşuƗs learned the art from Turkic masters, such as the example of the nineteenth-century Armenian aşuƗ Zahri who studied with the Turkish aşık master Necmi, though I have not encountered examples in the opposite direction.

Judging from extant written sources, there were hardly any women bards before the nineteenth century. Armenian and Azerbaijani female aşuƗ/aşıqs first appeared in that century in what are now the republics of Armenian and Azerbaijan. From the available sources, there seems no restriction on what or where they perform. In contrast, even in the mid-twentieth century in Eastern Turkey and Iranian Azerbaijan the concept of a female aşık was still strenuously rejected by locals. Significantly, all six female aşiks listed by Artun were born after 1920s in the Adana, Eskişehir, Çorum, and Sivas provinces, with only the last emanating from inland Anatolia. For the sole case from the Sivas province, it is not clear whether the woman Şahturna is of Alevi-Bektaşi family background. This is important as in that community there are fewer

---

96 Levonyan, 1944, p. 39. I also heard from Prof. Zumrud Dadaşzada in Baku on Jun. 5th 2011 that she knew of a contemporary Armenian aşuƗ from Urmia region in the West Azerbaijan Province, Northwestern Iran, who had studied with an Azeri master.
97 Aşıq Pari is often labeled as the first woman aşiq. She was from Karabakh and died in 1834. See: Axundov, Sakaoglu et al. 1985, vol. 1, p. 118. However, in an article of Anna Oldfield Senarslan an even earlier name appears: Aşıq Zarnigar from Derbent, who was the wife of aşiq Valah. See Anna Oldfield Senarslan, “It’s time to drink blood like its sherbet’: Azerbaijani women aşıqs and the transformation of tradition”, Congrès des Musiques dans le Monde d’Islam, 2007, p. 2. But this name is otherwise unknown. Levonyan also reported the names of several nineteenth-century female Armenian aşıls such as Maro Naxijevanc’i, Varso Larsec’i, and T’amar Erevanc’i, on which, see p. 44. I cannot find any biographical reference to them.
100 Artun, 2011, pp. 483-484.
restrictions on women’s activities. According to Başgöz, since the term aşık denotes a person in the throes of passionate love, it would be considered a disgrace for a Muslim woman before marriage. But even a married one would expose herself to serious pressure from the men. “Only after the 1960 Turkish constitution was ratified guaranteeing human rights and civil liberties to all citizens did women aşıks, mainly from Alevi groups, begin to join aşık organizations and participate in concert tours with male aşıks. Yet even after this, there are no reports of a single woman aşık narrating hikaye.”

Until WWI, bards from a Sufi background propagating their religious beliefs by way of bardic performance were not rare. However, subsequently radical changes in both Soviet domains and the Turkish Republic have significantly reduced their numbers now. At the same time, hikaye story telling, or in some cases secular aşık/aşıq performance in general is opposed by conservative Muslim clerics.

2. Reasons for becoming a bard

Due to the scarcity of biographical details this topic is much less documented for sixteenth to eighteenth century bards. Fortunately, in sharp contrast to them, many modern bards have recorded their own account about how they became a bard. The most easily available recent collection of these stories is, perhaps, the corresponding section in İlhan Başgöz’s study *Hikâye*. In these narratives the most prominent

102 As reported by Başgöz, in the 1960s, some conservative mullahs in Tabriz were still opposed to the aşıqs’ singing and storytelling. See “Turkish Hikâye-telling tradition in Azerbaijan, Iran”, in Kemal Silay ed., *Turkish folklore and oral literature*, Indiana University Turkish Studies, Bloomington, IN, 1998, p. 27.
theme is love, either for a concrete person, who in Eastern Anatolian cases is always a
girl;\textsuperscript{104} or for the aşık art itself.\textsuperscript{105} Still, Başgöz convincingly argues that the rationale
for becoming a bard is usually varied\textsuperscript{106}. Besides love, poverty is mentioned frequently
as a motivating factor. The revealing dream is a common topic for Muslim bards when
discussing their selecting this type of career, but there are grounds for querying the
significance of this bardic convention, which will be reviewed in a later section.

3. Training of a bard

This process is a less discussed, too, especially for the Early Modern period, also
because of the relative paucity of sources.

Though a boy could become interested in the art from a very young age, training
usually began only from adolescence, and lasted several years.\textsuperscript{107} According to some
Turkish scholars,\textsuperscript{108} the process can be divided into three periods: apprenticeship,
novitiate, and becoming a master.\textsuperscript{109}

In the first phase apprentices merely learn from the master, mainly hearing and
reproducing\textsuperscript{110} the stories (hikayes) and lyrical poems, either as a component of the
stories or as independent pieces, either composed by the master himself or by other
famous bards, and playing musical instruments. Many bards were literate, since it is

\textsuperscript{104} Başgöz, 2008, p. 98.
\textsuperscript{105} As in the case of aşık İshak Kemail, Başgöz, 2008, p. 78; However, if the revealing dream, as to be
discussed later, is not always dependable, as Başgöz has revealed; then the credibility of such account,
involving love for a girl and a revealing dream simultaneously, should be questionable, too.
\textsuperscript{106} According to aşık Üzeyir Püunhani’s own comment in Başgöz, 2008, pp. 82-83.
\textsuperscript{107} As observed from the life stories in Başgöz, 2008, pp. 82-85.
\textsuperscript{108} For example: Artun, 2011, pp.55-58.
\textsuperscript{109} Their respective Turkish forms are: çırak yetiştirme (or kapılanma), kalfalık and ustalık. See Artun
2011, pp. 61-64.
\textsuperscript{110} There is no proof that any written material, for example, the master’s defter, were used additionally.
often necessary to take down the poems as an aid in memorization. The masters would take apprentices to visit other bards to provide them with opportunities to learn from others as well. We hear that apprenticeship was rigid and strict, and that by no means all the apprentices finally become masters. Indeed, sometimes the percentage of elimination was very high.111

The novitiate phase started with the performance of a song composed by the master to the accompaniment of a saz in front of an audience. In this phase the novice could perform existing pieces publicly while continuing to study and improve his knowledge and technique in preparation for future creative activities after graduating.112 On completing all the requirements and being considered well qualified by the master, the novice would advance to the status of master and begin to perform independently, composing new stories, poems, or melodies on his own before accepting apprentices of his own.113

There are two issues of some importance to address here. First, in some cases the disciple’s daily expenses were covered by the master, so that if the disciple received any reward from the audience for a performance before he qualified, he might have to transfer the prize either as cash or in kind to his master as a token of gratitude and respect.114 Second, in many cases, in addition to his bardic career the disciple would have other means of support often more lucrative than being a bard.115

111 An example: among famous modern Azerbaijani asiq Ələsgər (1821-1926)’s about thirty disciples, only two completed. See  Həkimov, 2006, p. 514; Artun, 2011, p. 63.
113  Artun, 2011, p. 64.
4. Conventions governing the graduation from bardic training: examinations, dreams, pilgrimages, assuming a professional name (makhlaṣ), and becoming a master

Again records relating to these activities are scarce and scattered and have to be collected from Turkish, Armenian, and Azeri sources mostly from the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, and collated. Therefore, every aspect of this composite synthesis may not be completely representative of the tradition as a whole.

A. Examination: Coverage of this theme is largely dependent on Garegin Levonyan’s description of nineteenth-century Armenian aşuƗs.¹¹⁶ When a disciple felt himself well prepared to become a master, he would apply to the chief of the local master aşuƗs (called ustabaši as in Turkish in Alek‘sandrapol) to be examined with the prior agreement of his own master. The examination would take place in the coffee house, where the disciple’s master performed. On a set date, time, and place the examinee would welcome the assembly of the master aşuƗs, and the examination began. The disciple would have to answer questions from master aşuƗs first, then perform both songs and instrumental music. If the masters considered him qualified, the doyen of the local master aşuƗs would call him forward and give the disciple a full slap on the cheek, signifying that he was qualified to use the title master. The successful disciple would kiss him in return¹¹⁷ and express his gratitude to all the master aşuƗs. After the

¹¹⁶ But it should fit the Azerbaijani case at least, if it is not equally applicable to the Turks; since it has been quoted in Azerbaijani monographs with the comment “Armenians took this holy tradition of ours with great tricky too; even certify it at state level”. See Hǝkimov, 2006, p.514-515. Unfortunately, I have not seen any account from Azeri monographs more detailed than Levonyan’s.
¹¹⁷ According to Hǝkimov, he kisses both the ustabaši and his own master’s hands. See Hǝkimov, 2006, p. 515.
examination, a press release would be prepared for publication.118

B. Revealing dream and/or pilgrimage: The dream motif is important for bards, perhaps even more so in the Early Modern period when religion played a more significant role in the daily life of the Near East.119 According to certain traditions it is possible for a bard to begin his career through the guidance of a revealing dream or to master the bardic art after such a dream. These dreams were always connected with a saint or even a pilgrimage. Here some differences emerge between Turkic and Armenian convention.

In the known Armenian cases, all of which predate the twentieth century, the saint is St. John the Precursor (Baptist) (in Armenian, Surb Karapet) who is regarded as the patron saint of Armenian ašuš120. The pilgrimage then relates to his shrine at the Mšō Sult`an Surb Karapet Monastery near the city of Mush. The background to the dream is quite straightforward and almost formulaic. After a period of study and practice when the apprentice is already quite good at his art, the would-be ašuš would go on the pilgrimage to Mush. After visiting the monastery he would receive a dream, in which St. John the Precursor himself appeared and qualified him as an ašuš, often after the would-be ašuš had completed the Precursor’s own ordeal for him. Among the many bards to receive their revealing dream during/after such a pilgrimage were Łul

118 Levonyan, 1944, pp. 22-23.
119 So far the lengthiest monograph on this topic is probably Umay Günay’s Türkiye’de Âşık tarzı şiiri geleneği ve rüya motifi (3rd ed., Akçağ, Ankara, 1999), which devotes about 80 pages (pp. 78-156) to the dream motif.
Yovhannēs and Yart’un-Ōlli. The latter’s dream was passed down by his fellow villagers, reported to Aram Eremean and published. According to this tradition, Yart’un-Ōlli paid a pilgrimage to Mšō Sult’an Surb Karapet Monastery, historically the second holiest pilgrimage site on the Armenian Plateau after Ėǰmiacin, primatial see of the Armenian Apostolic Church.\footnote{The importance of the monastery is reflected from its large and illustrated image in a seventeenth-century map for Armenian pilgrims. See Gabriella Uluhogian: \textit{Un'antica mappa dell'Armenia: Monasteri e santuari dal I al XVII secolo}, Longo editore Ravenna, Ravenna, 2000, p. 107.} There, one night he identified a young man as St. John the Precursor who approached him with a load of cooked millet for him to carry to the mountaintop, which task he fulfilled. On its completion, Yart’un-Ōlli received the saint’s blessing and qualified as a full-fledged aşuƗ.\footnote{Aram Eremean, \textit{AŞUƗ YART’UN ŌLI}, 2nd ed.: Karō AŞUƗean, Tehran, 1946, p. 12.}

I have not encountered any description of revealing dreams and pilgrimage in Azeri monographs. As for Turkish aşıks, the dream can be subdivided into two types: the first, which is obviously the mainstream, as indicated by its close parallels to Armenian practice, occurs after a period of study, while the second, whose authenticity is extremely doubtful, actually appears to the would-be aşık before embarking on study. The most common formula for the dream is that a youth meets the saint(s) in the dream in which the latter introduce(s) the former to a girl, who may be the love of the young man in real life and require(s) him to drink a love potion that she offers him. Next morning, when the young man wakes and remembers the dream, he realizes that he has been conferred the ability to be an aşık, a God-inspired poet-lover, by divine revelation.\footnote{Başgöz, 2008, p. 110.} The revealing dream would occur at various places, e.g. beside the tomb
of a pir or sheikh, in the would-be aşık’s home, or elsewhere. It might happen at a
specific date/time, e.g. the anniversary of a saint,\footnote{124} or over a period of time,\footnote{125}
repeatedly over several years.\footnote{126} The saints to whom the would-be aşiks refer are more
diversified\footnote{127} as well. The most common is Saint Khidr,\footnote{128} who is regarded as the saint
of eternal life, followed by Prophet Ilyās (Elijah) in second place and then by other
saints like “The Seven Holy Ones”\footnote{129}, the “Three Dervishes”,\footnote{130} etc. In rarer cases the
saint’s appearance is substituted by pieces of paper with writing on them.\footnote{131}

Important parallels are to be observed among the three saints St. John the
Precursor, Elijah, and Khidr, that are most frequently involved among both Christians
and Muslims. Van Lint has demonstrated that despite different origins the three possess
the same ability to grant poetic inspiration. In common beliefs among Turkish Muslims,
Khidr and Ilyās often come together, or are simply identified, while in the Judeo-
Christian tradition, Elijah and John the Baptist are both considered forerunners of the
Messiah. The granting of inspiration is an age-old topic among many ancient peoples.

The veneration of John the Baptist as the patron saint of poets among Armenians

\begin{footnotes}
\item[124] Aşık İhsani, in a book he published in 1957, claimed that his revealing dream took place in the
night of the birthday of Muhammad, as quoted from Başgöz, 2008, p. 80. However, since he has more
than one versions of the dream himself, and later confessed for his fake in previous writings to Başgöz
during interview, the credibility of this claim is very doubtful.
\item[125] For Aşık İhsan Kemali’s account, see Başgöz, 2008, p. 78.
\item[126] Aşık Sabit Müdami says that he had the same dream when he was 7 and 14 years old, which made
him an aşık. See Başgöz, 2008, p. 78.
\item[127] Beside the records in Başgöz, 2008, pp. 77-82, collected from printed sources and Başgöz’s
interview with the aşiks, Umay Günay has collected stories about revealing dreams from hikayes or
real aşiks’ biographies, in Türkiye’de Âşık tarzı şiiri geleneği ve rüya motifi, pp. 100-153. The plots are
similar.
\item[128] In Turkish, spelled as Hzir. Here I follow Theo van Lint’s spelling, since his article is the most
quoted document in the discussion about this saint.
\item[129] For one of aşık Yaşar Reyhani’s accounts, see Başgöz, 2008, p. 79 and, for Başgöz’s explanation of
these two terms, see ibid., p. 289.
\item[130] Aşık Behçet Mahir’s account, Başgöz, 2008, pp. 81-82.
\item[131] Also from aşık İhsan Kemali’s account: Başgöz, 2008, p. 78.
\end{footnotes}
predates the inception of the bardic tradition in the sixteenth century.\textsuperscript{132} Though it is
difficult to claim any syncretism or cross-influence between John the Baptist and Khidr,
the close parallels are noteworthy.

From the description above it can be concluded that the revealing dream is an
essential step to becoming a bard, if not the only step. Naturally, the credibility of such
dreams has fallen under suspicion in modern times, as illustrated by Başgöz.\textsuperscript{133} Though
some bardic candidates might experience the phenomenon in a heightened
psychological state, since the dream has long been regarded as an indispensable step to
becoming an aşık.\textsuperscript{134} However, in certain cases aşşıks might attempt to “produce” or
“summon” such a dream, rather than waiting for the revelation to appear.\textsuperscript{135} Others
even admit that such dreams, whether envisioned by themselves or other aşşıks, are
simply faked in order either to arouse their audience’s curiosity, or to satisfy the
audience, otherwise the deeply religious would pay no heed to the aşşıks’ artistic
perfection.\textsuperscript{136} In other cases aşşıks would even concoct such a dream \textit{ad hoc} to satisfy
anyone probing more deeply into their qualifications to be a bard.\textsuperscript{137} At all events,
Başgöz’s argument is irrefutable that, whether the dream exists or not, it is simply
impossible for anybody to master the art without years of arduous practice.\textsuperscript{138}

\textsuperscript{132} An example is thirteenth-century poet Yovhannēs Erznkacak’s invocation to Surb Karapet at the end
of one of his poems, as quoted from van Lint, 2005, p. 355.
\textsuperscript{133} Başgöz, 2008, pp. 110-115.
\textsuperscript{134} Başgöz, 2008, p. 111.
\textsuperscript{135} Ibid. As Başgöz reports, Aşık Nesimi, during his obsession for such a dream, drank a glass of salty
water before going to bed every night, since he believed that the salt would make him thirsty, and in its
turn would compel him to drink the love potion in the dream.
\textsuperscript{136} Başgöz, 2008, pp. 77, 81, 111.
\textsuperscript{137} Başgöz, 2008, pp. 111-112.
\textsuperscript{138} Başgöz, 2008, p. 112.
C. The practice of assuming a professional name (makhlaṣ) was common among Muslim literary poets and was once almost a requisite for bards of all ethnic backgrounds. In the past, the master would confer the name on the new bard, but more recently some bards choose it for themselves.\(^{139}\)

The professional name\(^ {140}\) might derive from the bard’s family name or surname (Dadaloğlu; Yart’un-Öllî\(^ {141}\)), hometown (Magripioğlu; Şirak), life story or lifestyle (Köroğlu;\(^ {142}\) È’im-Öllan\(^ {143}\)), profession or craft (Katibi;\(^ {144}\) Zarkyar\(^ {145}\)), physical appearance (Benli Ali\(^ {146}\)), confession (Mesihi\(^ {147}\)), personal qualities, whether complimentary or derogatory (Fakirî;\(^ {148}\) Igit’\(^ {149}\)), etc. It seems that from the late nineteenth century on, some bards are known simply by their real names.\(^ {150}\) The norm in the bardic tradition was to employ names of Arabic/Persian/Turkic origin until the late nineteenth century, though earlier references to some Armenian aşıuls as Vartan, Civan, etc. in Turkish sources probably denote their performance name.\(^ {151}\) Though the employment of professional names of Armenian origin has expanded after the

---

139 Artun, 2011, p. 65.
140 The professional names appearing here are taken from Ertun, 2011, p. 65, and various sources. Not all of them are explained or furnished with references.
141 This is the Azeri translation of his surname Yarut’iwnen in New Julfan dialect form. Note the employment of patronymics as means of designating family ties.
142 Turkish: “Son of the blind man”.
143 Turkish: “Son of the orphan”, professional name of a nineteenth-century Armenian aşu苫.
144 Turkish: “Of a scribe”.
145 Persian-Turkish: “Goldsmith”, professional name of a nineteenth-century Armenian aşu苫.
146 Benli: Turkish “spotted (face)”.
147 An Arabic loanword in Turkish for a Christian.
148 Turkish: “Of a pauper”.
149 Turkish: “Brave”, professional name of a twentieth-century Armenian aşu苫.
D. A bardic career would not exclude the bards’ pursuing other sources of income, which might even become their economic mainstay. Başgöz reports various second jobs the aşıks he interviewed held as farmer, small business owner, livestock feed seller, cattle raiser, doorkeeper, bus conductor, etc. Of course, a devoted performer could well abandon his previous occupation to become a bard full-time. One exceptional example is the 18-19 century Isfahani Armenian aşuƗ Łul Yovhannēs, who ended his career as an architect and to devote himself fully to being aşuƗ in his later years.

D. Bardic organizations

This aspect of the tradition has received much less discussion. Reports on such organizations before WWI are scattered and usually brief. Garegin Levonyan provided the most in-depth coverage based on the Armenian aşuƗ organization in Alek’sandrapol. The trade union there was characterized by its statutes, with an administrative body elected by general vote, under the leadership of an ustabaşı. The organization had a treasury funded by its members’ monthly dues for money-lending. In addition to receiving the local ustabaşı’s consent aşuƗs from outside were required to pay the

---

152 Levonyan, p. 45. As for modern and contemporary Armenian aşuƗs’ stage names, see the list on Sayat-Nova Cultural Union’s webpage http://sayat-nova.org/ashughs/, as retrieved on Sept. 4, 2015.
153 As shown from Başgöz’s interview with Turkish aşıks, see Başgöz, 2008, pp. 95-98.
154 See Eremean, 1929, p. 8.
155 This is the literal translation of Levonyan’s term arhestak’akan miwit’yun.
equivalent of three months’ member’s dues to the treasury to perform in the city.\textsuperscript{156} This structure betrays all the features and norms of a guild (\textit{hamk`arut`yun} in Armenian) as constituted at that time in the Near East.

Related to organizations is the issue of bardic jargons only raised by Levonyan.\textsuperscript{157} According to him, there is a kind of secret language among Armenian aşuƗs known as \textit{t`ars lezun} in Armenian.\textsuperscript{158} Its main feature was the metathesis of letters in content words. For example, \textit{ōr} (day) becomes \textit{ro}, \textit{ser} (love) \textit{res}, \textit{luys} (light) \textit{suyl}, \textit{sirun} (handsome) \textit{risun}, \textit{xanum} (woman) \textit{nuxam}, \textit{manušak} (violet) \textit{šanumak}, \textit{mxit’arank’} (consolation) \textit{xmit’arank’}, etc. Structural words, reflexive affixes, and syntax were unaffected. Levonyan gives a detailed description of it but no indication of its origin. One might speculate that such a practice was not unique among Armenian aşuƗs, but in broader circulation among bards. Clearly Levonyan was in a unique position to discuss such phenomena, being the son of Živani, the most famous and accomplished Armenian aşuƗ at the turn of the twentieth century, thus gaining access to much insider information inaccessible for scholars in general.

Köprülü reports that Sultan Mahmud II established a formal organization for aşiks in Constantinople as one of the \textit{loncas}, or guilds of artisans, whose head was an aşık chosen by the government from the aşiks gathering in a coffee house in the neighborhood of Tavukpazarı, the largest place in the city for aşiks to gather, who bore

\textsuperscript{156} Levonyan, 1944, p. 22.
\textsuperscript{157} Levonyan, 1963, pp. 197-199.
\textsuperscript{158} This term \textit{t`ars} of Turkish origin should mean “opposite”. See Hrač`ya Ačaṙyan, \textit{Hayeren armatakan baıaran}, vol. II, Erevani Hamalsarani Hratarakč`ut`yun, 1963, p. 162, under the entry \textit{t`arsel}. 73
the title of "âşık kâhyası", or "aşık housekeeper". Another official with the title reis-i âşikan/âşiklar reisi ("head of the aşıks") was employed by the government to control local aşıks and to use them for propaganda.\(^{159}\)

Available sources for bardic organizations in the twentieth century are even scarcer. Başgöz indicates that an organization called Aşıklar Derneği (Society of Aşıks) existed in Turkey in years 1961-1971, which was "supported politically and organizationally by the Turkish Labor Party, and turned into a vigorous protest movement, and shut down after the 1971 military coup."\(^{160}\) Similarly, the Konya Aşıklar Derneği (Society of Aşıks in Konya) referred to above was established by Fevzi Halıcı in 1964 with support from conservative political powers.\(^{161}\)

In Azerbaijan it seems no official organization for aşıqs existed before the Union of Azerbaijani Aşıqs (Azerbaijani: Azərbaycan Aşıqlar Birliyi) was established in 1983 under the Ministry of Culture\(^{162}\) since the three prior congresses were convened by other institutions, e.g. the Central Executive Committee of the AzSSR or the Azerbaijani Writers’ Union.\(^{163}\) Judging from fragmentary reports, it seems the Union of Azerbaijani Aşıqs functioned by and large like the writers’ unions and similar organizations during the Soviet period. It continues into the Post-Soviet period.\(^{164}\) As for the situation in Armenia, it seems a separate ašuƗs’ union might not even exist in the

\(^{159}\) Köprüülü, 1962-1965, pp. 526-527. He had more detailed description about the situation in an article "Âşık fasılları" (İkdam, Apr. 25th 1914), which is part of his series “Saz şairleri” in a newspaper unavailable to me. Some parts of this article are quoted from Günay, 1999, pp. 32-34.

\(^{160}\) Başgöz, 2008, p. 97.

\(^{161}\) Ibid.

\(^{162}\) Oldfield Senarslan, 2007, p. 19.


\(^{164}\) See their website: [www.azab.az](http://www.azab.az), as retrieved on Sept. 4, 2015.
Soviet period, since T’ova Polosyan became the founder and first chairman of this organization only in 1997, as mentioned before.

E. Classification of bards according to their ambience

Traditionally, scholarly monographs classify aşıks in accordance with their ambience since the milieu of performance is affiliated with their social milieu.165

1. City/town bards

From the nineteenth century on these bards attracted academic interest and became the object of scholarly study.166 Their chief milieu was the coffee house, tavern, or similar establishments (for example, caravanserais). In many cases urban bards performed with small bands of 3 or 4 instrumentalists, most of whom were sazandars, or performers of stringed instruments. The band might be named after its conductor.167

According to Başgöz, many of them were associated with or had contracts with certain coffee houses or other performing establishments,168 but some would wander from town to town to perform or follow go on circuits as well.169

---

165 Levonyan, 1944, pp. 16-33 and Artun, 2011, pp. 48-55. In contrast to Armenian and Turkish scholars, Azerbaijani scholars tend to classify aşıqs according to their creativity, which is the only kind of aşıq classification in all the Azeri monographs I have encountered. According to Namazov (1983, pp.85-86), aşıqs can be divided into three levels: master or composing aşıq (üstad aşıq or yaradıcı aşıq), poet-aşıq (el şair) and performing aşıq (ifacı aşıq). Aşıqs of the first level are specialized in the art, can play saz, compose poems and stories; second level aşıqs reside more on composing poems and stories; while the last level aşıqs in most cases can learn and perform already existing works only.

166 When Başgöz was conducting his fieldwork about Turkish aşıks, this was already the only group of aşıks, whom he met, though the great majority of those aşıks were of village origin. This group, too, was undergoing decline. See Başgöz, 2008, esp. pp. 24-94, 214-216.

167 Levonyan, 1944, pp. 19-20.

168 At the same time, performing at weddings is an indispensable part of the aşıks’ function as well. See Başgöz, 2008, p.167.

169 Levonyan, 1944, p. 28. But he did not explain whether those aşıls associated with coffee houses performed on this circuit sporadically as well.
The coffee house is of quintessential importance for bardic performance in the Near East as taverns and other places where wine or alcohol is sold had long become the monopoly of non-Muslims, granted that wine is haram for Muslims since, according to the Sharia, they are forbidden entry to such places. In contrast, coffee houses could be owned and operated by people of all confessions, hence becoming a better space for people of different confessions to mix.¹⁷⁰ It thus became an ideal place for bards to gather, perform, and improve their art by learning from each other and other art forms.

The coffee house appeared in the Ottoman Empire in the sixteenth century and was accepted in Constantinople by the middle of the same century.¹⁷¹ It immediately became a gathering place for intellectuals from all over the empire,¹⁷² as well as Sufis, however, it experienced a decline in the bardic tradition over the nineteenth and twentieth centuries.¹⁷³

Under the rubric of city/town aşıs Levonyan actually identifies five subtypes, of which four have little to do with coffee houses or taverns. Instead those bards have income from other sources.¹⁷⁴ However, based on Levonyan’s book, it seems that the

¹⁷⁰ For example, Başgöz reports that a balaban (to be explained in the section on musical instruments) player for an Azeri aşıq whom he met in Tabriz was Arakel, an Armenian. See “Turkish Hikaye-telling tradition in Azerbaijan, Iran”, Başgöz, 1998, p. 33.
¹⁷¹ “In Istanbul and Rûmîli coffee first appeared in the reign of Sulaymân I (926/1520-974/1566). In 962/1544 a man from Aleppo and another from Damascus opened the first coffee houses (kahwe-khâne) in Istanbul. These soon attracted gentlemen of leisure, wits, and literary men seeking distraction and amusement, who spent the time over their coffee reading or playing chess or backgammon, while poets submitted their latest poems for the verdict of their acquaintances. This new institution was also jokingly called the mekteb-i ‘ırfân (school of knowledge). The coffee house met with such approval that it soon attracted civil servants, kâdîs and professors also”. Encyclopedia of Islam, 2nd edition, vol. IV, Leiden, 1978, p. 451.
¹⁷³ This paragraph is mainly based on Artun, 2011, pp. 42-44.
¹⁷⁴ Levonyan, 1944, p. 28 and Başgöz, 2008, pp. 95-97. Başgöz also observes the change in these aşıks' income in the 20 century. Some of them publish their works and sell them for money, while others receive funding from the government or political organizations. These changes take place in Turkey from the 1940s, while in the Russian Empire or the Soviet Union, similar changes may have
Armenian ašuƗs then performing in coffee houses were rather professional artists, without a regular income, whose earnings consisted of coffee house patrons’ voluntary donations, as well as weddings and feasts, where they were invited to perform.\textsuperscript{175}

The second group\textsuperscript{176} was sedentary,\textsuperscript{177} part-time ašuƗs lacking accompanying bands, who were more often known as narrators (\textit{asac`oƗ}). They would perform purely at family gatherings or festivities, thus adding private residences as a milieu for bardic performance. Their performances included stories, rhymed compositions, and improvised quatrains about well-known figures, all in a light vein.

Apart from solo narrators, Levonyan also identified a type of dialoguing or antiphonal ašuƗs, called the narrator and speaker (\textit{patmol} and \textit{asol}) respectively, who would perform in the open air, in the courtyards of churches and caravanserais, squares, crossroads, street corners, etc. According to Levonyan, they performed famous Eastern romances like Ashik Kerib, Koroğlu, etc., deriving from the common stock-in-trade of all bards\textsuperscript{178} with one of them playing the saz. Levonyan has vivid descriptions of such open-air performance.\textsuperscript{179} These are complemented by that of Grišašvili.\textsuperscript{180} According

\textsuperscript{175}Levonyan, 1944, p. 20. Ioseb Grišašvili reports similar ašiks in Tiflis. The milieu for these ašiks is set in coffee houses, they would tell Eastern heroic adventure stories like Koroğlu, Ashik Kerib, Shah Ismail, etc. in accompany of their saz for hours without pause. See Ioseb Grišašvili, Hrač ya Bayramyan, Matin Karamyan trans.: \textit{Hin Tiflisi grakan Bohemė (Dzveli Tbilisis literaturuli bohema)}, Merani, Tbilisi, 1989, p. 64.

\textsuperscript{176}Levonyan, 1944, p. 28.

\textsuperscript{177}Ibid. this is the literal translation of the word he chose: \textit{nstakyac`}.

\textsuperscript{178}There is one sub-section dedicated to the contents of these romances later in the section of bardic performance.

\textsuperscript{179}He also reported that ašuƗ Feyradi (Fahrad), a young contemporary of him, was circuiting in towns and villages, yet not telling these common stories, but plots from Abovean, Raffi, Proşean, Cerenc`’s novels. His songs are adapted from short stories' plots as well. Here the influence of nationalism is apparent. See: Levonyan, 1963, p. 110.

\textsuperscript{180}Grišašvili, 1989, pp. 62-64.
to the latter, the ašik narrative (naql in Georgian) relates to “good and bad people’s adventures and deeds”. But if bards performed during religious festivals in the courtyard of churches, squares, or simply on a piece of flat ground, they would treat only religious themes from the Bible, perhaps in dialogue form, adapted into verse, with accompanying music. At other times the performance would be secular. Those might take place in the market, with bands and soloists, while the two ašiks would perform witty and comical dialogues in verse with moralistic teachings to saz accompaniment. Due to its secular nature and popularity, such performance was condemned by the clergy and disappeared in the 1880s in Tiflis.

The last two types of bards had already disappeared by Levonyan’s time. The first of these was a commedian telling jokes (latifači\textsuperscript{181} in Turkey, khamuri in Georgia, and bambaṙak in Armenia). Practitioners wore a red gown and hat, and made a sudden appearance at a home or public feast and wedding, performing various mocking movements and telling jokes and humorous quatrains devoted to the “heroes of the day”. The final type was a juggler, who was able to play more than two instruments or perform other tricks simultaneously. Two examples of this type are Sari-Ӫłlan, the Armenian ašuƗ of the great Janissary Abe Ağa in Constantinople in the first half of the nineteenth century and the Armenian ašuƗ Miskin Burǰi (d. 1847) from Ganja.\textsuperscript{182}

2. Court bards

These played here not only in the courts of heads of state like the Ottoman Sultan,
Iranian Shah, or Georgian king, but also the palaces or residences of various lower officials such as khans, pashas, and other local rulers. We have already noted aşıq Qurbani’s invitation to Shah Ismail I’s court for a period. Sayat’-Nova’s identity as Georgian King Erekle II’s court poet is well known. Meanwhile, during the reigns of sultans Mahmud II, Abdülmecid, and Abdülaziz there were places for 20-30 aşıks at the Ottoman court, who would play in the sultan’s presence\textsuperscript{183}.

Although praise for the masters in whose employ they found themselves, or other topics pertaining to the ruling class, might be regarded as important themes in their works, their status was that of musician and entertainer rather than court poet and hence there are few songs of this kind in their output, e.g. Qurbani’s single song in straight praise of Shah Ismail I and Sayat’-Nova’s \textit{Dun ēn glxên imastun} is “Thou art profoundly wise”\textsuperscript{184}, a petition to King Erekle II of Kartli. Similarly, there is hardly any evidence that any of them might have been involved in politics.

3. Muslim religious places and Sufi bards

Sufi bards belonged to one or other Sufi order and might wander from city to city, residing in local tekkes and performing there, though their performance was not restricted to the tekkes alone. The content of their works might vary over a wide spectrum, but always on a Sufi theme such as the transitoriness of this world, love of God, and ultimate unity with God, etc. If the order was involved in politics, they might immediately become political propagandists as well, as is exemplified by Pir Sultan

\begin{footnotes}
\footnoteref{artun}
\footnoteref{dowsett}
\end{footnotes}
Abdal. This type of bard also included Armenian aşıls who converted to Islam, though biographical information about them is very meager.

4. Army/Navy aşık

This category is restricted to Ottoman Muslim aşıks as Christians were excluded from military service in both the Ottoman Empire and Iran for most of the time under discussion. Moreover, no information is extant on purely professional lay soldiers simultaneously performing as an aşıq in Azerbaijan or Southern Caucasus. Since the army aşıks were connected with the Janissaries, they would have had a strong connection with the Bektaşi order, too. Predictably, the military is an essential theme in their works. Sometimes such aşıks would have been commissioned to promote the soldiers/sailors’ morale as the mehter band, judging from their songs. Artun mentions that after 1826 the tasks traditionally performed by the Janissary aşıks’ were assumed by aşıks who wanted to take on military service, yet there seem to be no data on major military aşıks from the nineteenth century in the lists compiled by Köprülü and Artun.

5. Countryside bards

Artun identifies two types of village aşık, nomadic, and settled. However, Levonyan contends that even these settled bards do not necessarily perform in villages exclusively. During winter when villagers were free from regular labor, the bards would perform for them in courtyards or family gatherings while in other seasons when the peasants were busy they would go to nearby towns or cities to perform in the street, in

---

185 Artun, 2011, pp. 53-54.
squares or churches, or in family yards. Indeed, Levonyan provides detailed description of their solo performance in the open air. Most of these bards were blind and illiterate. When they found an open air occasion where many people were present, they would sit down on the ground with their legs crossed and begin to perform. If any passer-by was moved by their songs, they would leave a token of their appreciation in the handkerchief in front of the bard. If those bards appeared in groups without any musical instrument, they were called *mtrup*.\textsuperscript{187} It seems that this type of village bard is alluded to in the preface to the novel *Wounds of Armenia* by Xač`atur Abovean. According to Artun, settled village bards composed in the folk idiom and treated the topics of love, nature, and village life in a simple, sometimes coarse, style closer to anonymous folklore.\textsuperscript{188}

6. Nomadic bards

Accounts of this type of bard are extremely scarce. Most records relate to Ottoman Turkmen nomadic aşıks whose existence continued into the nineteenth century, most of whom came from Southern, Southeastern, or Eastern Anatolia, where Turkmen and other nomadic people lived. Descriptions of nature and nomadic life and a folkloristic style are two significant features of their works.\textsuperscript{189} Additionally, Qasımlı mentions Qaşqay aşıqs in central Southern Iran in tribes that retain a nomadic life until today, so that possibly these Qaşqay aşıqs may still be nomadic now as well.\textsuperscript{190}

F. Regional bardic centers

\textsuperscript{187} Levonyan, 1944, p. 32.  
\textsuperscript{188} Artun, 2011, pp. 48-50.  
\textsuperscript{189} Artun, 2011, pp. 50-51.  
\textsuperscript{190} Qasımlı, 2003, p. 264.
Scholarly literature up to this point has employed varied terminology by which to refer collectively to a series of bards associated with a particular location over a prolonged period of time (Turkish kol “branch”, Armenian dproc’ “school”, Azeri məktəb “school” or mühit “milieu”). They all manifest systemic problems in suggesting a greater degree of lineal progression or continuity than can be supported by the historical record, particularly for the Early Modern era. Here the more general term “center” will be used both for uniformity as well as to avoid the sort of misinterpretation associated with the others.

Turkish monographs provide the most detailed definition of the terminology used. According to Doğan Kaya, an aşık branch is “a school within the apprenticeship tradition, (made up) by gradually increasing aşıks, obedient to the nuclear master, continuing his style, language, rhyme, tune, theme, memories and romances.” Emphasis on the pivotal figure, the core master, who founded the branch as the basis for defining the subsequent grouping of bards affords greater comprehensiveness than the principle of geographical distribution found in Armenian and Azeri monographs. At the same time, it is more feasible to construct such a grouping in the Turkish case since scholars mainly trace the lineage of the Anatolian aşık branches from the nineteenth century, for which there is much more documentation available, rather than in the Azerbaijani case, where the attempt is made to extend the groups back into the eighteenth or even seventeenth century. Inevitably, this means that Azerbaijani lineages are often significantly vaguer, with only one representative per century, which renders results

---

significantly less reliable.\textsuperscript{192} However, according to the Turkish scholars’ definition mentioned above, it is not enough to construct a “branch” only by a geographical region and inaugurating aşık(s). The aşık(s) identified with the same branch should reflect similarities in the style of their literary and musical compositions as well. Artun lists the major branches of Turkish aşık(s) by the core master who inaugurated it, with the geographical distribution added in brackets, tracing these from the late nineteenth century and up to the present,\textsuperscript{193} as the Emrah Branch (Tokat-Kastamonu), Dertli Branch (Bolu-Kastamonu-Çankırı), Ruhsatı Branch (Sivas), Sümmani Branch (Erzurum), Derviş Muhammed Branch (Malatya), Huzuri Branch (Artvin), and Şenlik Branch (East Anatolia-Azerbaijan).

As noted in other contexts, Armenians display a greater readiness than their regional counterparts to adopt European cultural approaches and terminology. This is evidenced by Levonyan’s use of the term “school” to define two sets of regional groupings of Armenian aşuƗs on the paradigm of modern literary schools. In the latter context the term implies a tight coterie of writers congregated around the same conception of the nature of literature and its aims, methodology, and approach to literary creation, who then put these principles into practice in their writing. In the Armenian milieu that terminology is perfectly appropriate to literary groups like the Vernatun in 1890s Tiflis and Mehean in 1900s Constantinople, however although Levonyan combines artistic and stylistic features with his geographical groupings, those are still

\textsuperscript{192} Qasımli, 2003, pp. 177-280.
\textsuperscript{193} Artun, 2001, pp. 65-66.
too diffuse to warrant the application of the term “school”. Moreover, Levonyan
unfortunately does not record any Armenian ašuƗ lineages in his monographs.

The first set of ašuƗ clusters Levonyan identifies consists of three “major schools”
in Iran, the Ottoman Empire, and Tiflis, all bearing the influence of Turkish aşiks.194
The first is the Persian-Armenian school centered in Isfahan that lasted from the late
seventeenth century to the 1780s, composed in Azeri, Persian, and the New-Julfan
dialect of Armenian, an employed most commonly the genres of dyubeyit˚, Iošma,
muxammaz and dastan. Second is the Turkish-Armenian school, centered in
Constantinople that extended from the 1730s till the 1870s, and composed exclusively
in Turkish, utilizing more diversified forms with more abstruse content, and a loftier
style characterized by more Arabic and Persian words in their compositions, since this
group was under the comprehensive influence of Ottoman classical literature. The third
group comprises the Georgian-Armenian school, established in Tiflis from the 1750s to
the end of the nineteenth century, with Sayat`-Nova as the undisputed central figure,
composing in the Tiflis dialect of Armenian, and featuring a large number of Persian
and Azeri words.195

Although Levonyan designates the first grouping as centered on Constantinople,
in fact several of the traceable Armenian ašuƗs of the Ottoman Empire are scattered
over a vast geographic stretch rather than clustered in the capital and functioned over a
period of more than 300 years. Later published sources also allow us to nuance

194 Levonyan, 1944, p. 41.
Levonyan’s findings with regard to the language they employed, as some Armenian ašuƗs from the Ottoman sphere also composed songs in Armenian.\footnote{In Sahakyan’s collection there is no indication that any of the Ottoman Armenian ašuƗs’ works included there is the translation of a work originally written in Turkish. Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 419-422.}

The second set comprises “minor schools” (manr dproc’) of Armenian ašuƗs of more limited regional significance traced from early nineteenth century like the branches developed for Turkish aşıks. These include the Erzurum school (with the leading ašuƗ Nitayi\footnote{Born as Xač`atur in the village of Hinj, Erzurum in the 1810s, he composed in Turkish, and died in 1856. See Levonyan, 1944, pp. 30-33 and Amirean, 1989, p. 159.}), Kars school (T`uǰjar\footnote{Xač`ik Amirean spells his professional name as T`iwččari, or as in Turkish, Tüccari. Born as Yovhannēs in the village of Łan/Kan in the Kars district in the 1760s, he lost his eyesight due to illness in childhood. He studied the ašuƗ tradition with the famous Armenian ašuƗ Dearkeahi (or as in Turkish, Dergâhi) and composed in Turkish. He was famous for his genius in improvisation in storytelling. See Levonyan, 1944, pp. 21-22, 26, 1963, pp. 108-109, and Amirean, 1989, pp. 126-127.}), Alek’andrapol school (Bave\footnote{Biographical information is currently unavailable.}), Yerevan school (Shirin), Ganja school (Miskin Burjî\footnote{His real name is lost. He was born in Ganja in the 1810s, and also called Miskin-Allahverdi. No further details are available. See Levonyan, 1892, p. 30.}), Shamakh\footnote{Now Şamaxı in central Northern Azerbaijan.} school (Zargear\footnote{His birth name was Abraham. See Levonyan, 1892, p. 71-72.} and Turinǰ\footnote{Born as T`oros in the village of K`ark`anǰ in the district of Shamakh in the 1790s, he left his home region for Astrakhan in his youth, settled down there, and died at the age of 85. See Levonyan, 1892, pp. 23-24.}), the Mountainous-Karabakh-Zangezur ašuƗ congregation (centered in Xnjoresk, a village east of Goris, now in the Armenian province of Siwnik’), and the “national school” from the second half of nineteenth century, with J̌ ivani as the central figure.

Here, too, the general arguments outlined above regarding the use of terminology apply. Additionally, one should note that Levonyan admits that many of Armenian ašuƗs from these “small schools” composed in Turkish or Azeri. Only a minority of them has works in Armenian.
G. Bardic performance

1. The language of bardic performance

From its inception in the sixteenth century the general norm is for bardic composition to be written in Oghuz Turkic dialects.\(^{204}\) No extant works by Turkic bards is found in any other idiom. However, various other ethnic groups, especially Armenians, have employed other languages at different times. Several songs composed in Armenian date back to the seventeenth century.\(^{205}\) Meanwhile, both Armenian and Georgian bards composed in Georgian, while smaller numbers of songs, so far composed only by Armenians, exist in Persian and Kurdish. Thus, Yart’un Ölli has 3 songs in Persian,\(^{206}\) while a number of Îlahis\(^{207}\) in Kurdish are recorded in the Armenian script, either written or inscribed by Ottoman Armenians.\(^{208}\) At the same time, Gëorg Axverdean notes that in the early nineteenth century certain pious Armenian ašuƗs considered it blasphemous to sing in Armenian unless the work related to God or the saints, since the Armenian language was viewed as holy.\(^{209}\)

2. Collections of bardic songs: dav`t`ar/defter/daftar

---

\(^{204}\) In the preface to his novel *Wounds of Armenia* (*Verk’ Hayastani*), Abovyan describes how deeply the Armenian village audience was attracted by ašul performance, even though most of them could not understand it, since it was performed in Turkish. See X. Abovyan: *Erkeri liakatar žolovacu*, vol. 3, HSSR GA Hratarakè’ut`yun, Yerevan, 1948, p. 4.

\(^{205}\) Axverdean, 1852, preface, p. III.

\(^{206}\) Aram Eremean, *Ašul Yart’un Ölli*, 2nd ed.: Karô AšuƗean, Tehran, 1946, p. 31. He only mentioned the existence of these songs.

\(^{207}\) A rarer genre of bardic song with religious contents, hence the name Îlähi “of God”, as will be discussed in section 6 of Chapter 3.

\(^{208}\) They are taken from a collection of Kurmanji Kurdish songs published in the South-Eastern inland Ottoman city of Harput (Xarberd in Armenian) in 1880. See Mehmet Bayrak: *Alevi-Bektashi edebiyatında Ermeni aşıkları (aşuğlar)*, Öz-Ge Yayınları, Ankara, 2005, pp. 702-705, with 8 songs included and the source cited, but unfortunately lacking a study of the phenomenon.

\(^{209}\) Axverdean, 1852, preface, p. III.
As noted already, bardic performance consists of prose narrative and rhymed songs. Traditionally disciples learn the former from their masters by heart from mouth to ear, while the latter are written down in a notebook (davt’ar/defter/daftar). Consequently, the prose forms continually vary and develop in the course of circulation, but the songs enjoy greater stability even over centuries. The bards would inscribe the songs in their notebooks themselves, if they had eyesight and literacy. In cases they were incapable of do this themselves, it was done by their relatives, disciples, or intimates. So far bardic notebooks in the Arabic, Armenian, and Georgian scripts have been discovered. It has been stated that songs in some of these notebooks were organized according to the principle of elevated divans, i.e., according to the order of the last rhyme-bearing letters in the Arabic alphabet, but I have not seen any convincing example. It is also uncertain whether any of the songs included in a notebook might be intended for performance in one of the prose narrative(s) referred to.

210 There have been written record of the Hikaye narrative for a long time, too. But there are two major problems regarding them. Firstly, the written form cannot represent many elements of oral performance, e.g. formulae and most of the individualized remarks of the teller. Secondly, once the hikaye prose takes on written form, the number of songs included in performance decreases. See Bağcı, 2008, pp. 156-157.

211 Another Turkish word cónk is used side by side with it among Turks. So far I have seen no reference suggesting any nuance in meaning between these two names.


213 It should be noted that the alphabets are not one to one corresponding to the languages in which bardic songs were composed. The Arabic alphabet was used for Ottoman Turkish and Azeri dialects. The Armenian alphabet has been used for both Armenian and Turkish (Armeno-Turkish; but easily perceivable, most Armenian aşuš’s spelling is defective). As for the Georgian alphabet, Sayat’-Nova used it for both Armenian and Azeri.

214 Henrik Baxč’inyan, Sayat’-Nova: xaler: liakatar žolovacu, Grakanut’yan ev Arvesti T’angarani Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 2003, p. 287. Here Baxč’inyan is quoting from Morus Hasrə’yan, “Sayat-Novayi davt’arə”, Telekagir, 1963 (10), p. 9. However, judging from the order in both collections with Baxč’inyan as the main editor, which largely follow the original order in the Davt’ar, I cannot take this conclusion for granted. The final letters of each Azeri song do not even appear largely to correspond to their place in the Arabic alphabet, but seem quite random, not to mention the fact that in a divan, poems of the same genre should be classed together, a practice, which Sayat’-Nova did not follow faithfully. For the organization of the Davt’ar, see Morus Hasrə’yan, op. cit. and Baxč’inyan, 2003, pp. 285-300.
3. Standard musical instruments in bardic performance

The single most essential instrument for most bards is the saz, a long-necked lute-like stringed instrument. At least for Turkish/Azerbaijani aşık/aşıqs, performance on the saz is a requisite skill to be learned from the master. An interesting anecdote is transmitted in the name of the famous nineteenth-century Azerbaijani aşiq Ələşər to the effect that he forbade his disciples to marry until they had mastered the skill of performing tunes on the saz.

The saz, in all its varieties, is the most important musical instrument for solo performance. When performing together, other instruments are added to form a small ensemble. In such cases the kamanca (or as Levonyan calls it, čianur), çoğur/č`ongur, tar, kamani, santur, dap (tambourine), naqara, duduk/balaban or other instruments can be found. Levonyan affords a detailed list of the stringed instruments used by aşuƗs, including:

Harp-shaped: k`nar, tavił;
Dulcimer-shaped: k`anon, sant`ur;
Bowed string instruments: kamanca (čianur), k`emani (kamani);
Guitar or lute-shaped: saz, t`ař, č`nkyuř (çoğur/č`ongur).

While the duduk/balaban, a double-reed woodwind instrument, and the naqara

---

215 Turkic scholars may claim that saz is the substitute for the qobuz, just as aşık/aşıq is the avatar of ozan or bahşi; which is as difficult to verify as the latter claim due to the lack of record. See: Qasımlı, 2003, pp. 117-127.
217 Əkimov, 2006, pp. 496-509.
218 Levonyan, 1944, pp. 20, 31-32. For a more detailed list, see Levonyan, 1966, pp. 203-228, with images on p. 216. However, since his definition of aşuƗ is too broad, he even included several instruments portrayed in medieval sources only. The one listed above comprises those still circulating from the eighteenth to twentieth centuries.
drum are reported as in Azerbaijani aşiq performance.\textsuperscript{219}

However, in most cases the instrumentalists (sazandars) are not vocalists like the bard. For example, according to Levonyan, only the dap player might sing while performing.\textsuperscript{220}

4. Forms and procedures of bardic performance

From attested records at least four different forms of formal bardic performance are documented before WWI, the quasi-official performance in nineteenth-century Constantinople, which disappeared when official support dried up, quasi-religious performance, which continued into early twentieth century at least, Hikaye performance, and formal contest, both of which have continued into the post-WWII era. The locations for these performances had to be prepared well in advance. During the performance certain procedures and ceremonies are observed.

The procedures associated with the quasi-official and quasi-religious performances resemble each other somewhat, but have long since lost their importance, while differing significantly from Hikaye performance and contests.\textsuperscript{221} As a result, I will only offer a detailed treatment of Hikaye performance in coffee houses and contests.\textsuperscript{222}

A. Procedures of Hikaye performance in coffee houses in 1950s Kars, as recorded by Başgöz\textsuperscript{223}

\textsuperscript{219} Oldfield Senarslan, 2007, p. 1.
\textsuperscript{220} Levonyan, 1944, p. 32.
\textsuperscript{221} Due to this reason I decide not to give the full procedures here to save space. For references, see: Günay, 1999, pp. 35-38.
\textsuperscript{222} For Günay’s reference to these two forms, see Günay, 1999, pp. 39-77.
\textsuperscript{223} As concluded from Başgöz, 2008, pp.27-29, 157-170.
The Hikaye performance begins after the evening prayer. The audience begins to gather well before the performance, and everyone is served tea, providing the teahouse with an income. At the set time, the aşık appears with his saz. After tuning the instrument, he greets the audience, according to the opening formula of the performance called giriş kapı (“entrance door”). By this time members of the audience have also greeted each other and taken their seats. Nevertheless, the aşık does not begin the storytelling right away, but opens the performance with a döşeme (literally, “floor”), which includes a number of introductory songs in certain prosodies, improvised or prepared. Only after the döşeme does the storytelling proper begin in prose narrative with songs intercalated and interspersed with formulae and improvisation, and enhanced by physical gestures such as circling around the audience’s seats to maintain rapport. The tale might last for several nights. At its conclusion the aşık passes to the closing formula, or the “exit door” (çıkış kapı)\(^ \text{224}\) to close the performance.

B. Procedures of bardic contest, as drawn from Umay Günay’s and Erman Artun’s accounts\(^ \text{225}\)

There are several terms for the bardic contest in Turkish, karşılaşma (match), deyişme (lit. “saying”), atışma (battle of words) or karşıiberi (confrontation). In the

---


\(^{225}\) There is some suggestion that the bardic contest is of Central Asian origin and spread to the Caucasus only in the nineteenth century. So far I have not found any published material to support it. The only noteworthy point is that the contest, or according to the author’s term, “vocal dueling”, is prevalent in only three regions in Turkey from East to West: Kars, Erzurum, and Konya. The first two are the major cities for this activity, both in northeastern Turkey, maintaining a cultural connection with Azerbaijan, while the continuation of the tradition in Konya is mainly due to the annual Aşık Festival there. The author cites material corroborating the existence of a contest tradition in other Turkic-speaking area from Central Asia to Azerbaijan. See Yıldray Erdener, *The song contests of Turkish minstrels*, Garland Publishing, Inc., New York, NY, 1995, pp. 30-33.
contest, there can be more than two bards participating in front of the audience. The formal bardic contest comprises four phases:

a. Hoşlama (merhabaşlama): greetings. At the beginning all the participating bards greet the audience with quatrains with refrains containing words of welcome like “hoş geldiniz”, “safa geldiniz” etc.. If there is any celebrity in attendance, their names should be mentioned in particular.

b. Hatırlama (canlandırma) “preparation (activation)”: the participant bards are expected to perform songs composed by famous or popular bards preceding them.

c. Tekellüm “speaking, talking”: this is the main part of the contest, which generates most excitement. The participating bards compete in improvising songs on certain topics with certain rhyme schemes, both to be decided by the audience or the occasion of the performance. The competing bards are expected to belittle, humiliate, or even denigrate each other in the improvisations, for which the koşma is the most frequent prosody. If no one wins the competition, then all the bards should praise each other to mark the conclusion of this section in the proceedings.

d. Uğurlama (methiye, güle güle) “praise”, “eulogy” or “farewell”: this is the closing part of the contest. The most common prosody here is still the koşma. Participating bards are expected to apologize for their previous acrimonious improvisations and now to praise each other, letting the victor bring the contest to the end.

C. Procedures for an aşıf contest as summarized from Garegin Levonyan’s

---

226 Naturally, there is regional variation in the details.
accounts\textsuperscript{227}

Levonyan has reported a variant of the ašuƗ contest that, though composed of less formal phases than the preceding account, is no less dramatic. Additionally, Levonyan provides more details on the aftermath of such a contest.

In this case the contest takes place in an open-air place like a square, or a spacious coffee house. The participants are an established local master ašuƗ and a newly established ašuƗ or a freshman, who wants to display his art, skill\textsuperscript{228} and talent. Local and near-by ašuƗs attend as well, not only out of interest, but also as assistants and judges. The rivals sit down face to face, with saz in hand, and the contest starts with the already famous master ašuƗ.

The master ašuƗ opens with a song mocking the freshman’s audacity at even daring to challenge him. The freshman must answer with a song of exactly the same measure and rhyme. After this prelude, the newcomer plays a piece of difficult melody as a solo, in order to showcase his musical capability. Then the contest starts in earnest.

The master ašuƗ sings a \textit{lap`ullama}\textsuperscript{229} in a heavy tone, containing many questions for the challenger to answer. The challenger responds to each question with a song in the same measure and rhyme to display all his capability and talent. This is the most difficult facet of the ašuƗ art, since it is purely improvisational. If successful, the newcomer is qualified as a master ašuƗ, while If he fails, his saz is taken away and he has to leave to the words “Go! You are unworthy of being called an ašuƗ.” If his

\textsuperscript{227} Levonyan, 1963, pp. 188-190.
\textsuperscript{228} Here Levonyan used two Persian-Turkish words, \textit{hunar} and \textit{ma`rifat}.
\textsuperscript{229} The term’s etymology is unclear. It refers to songs containing a question in each one or two line(s), and corresponding answer. See Levonyan, 1963, pp. 184-185.
performance merits acceptance as a master ašuƗ, but the participant also wants to beat the already established master, the newly appointed master ašuƗ has to challenge the latter as the latter had challenged him, i.e., to compose a song to question the established master, but in a more difficult genre of song with a more complicated rhyme. If the latter fails to correspond, he has to descend to the mass audience in shame since “a wandering boy” has “beaten” him. If he does not wish to break the custom, he should hand his saz directly to the challenger and kiss the latter’s hand, thereby admitting that the challenger is more accomplished than himself. But the norm on such rare occasions is for the winner to magnanimously return the saz to the previous master, kissing his hand and begging his “fatherly blessing.”

Even if the established master was trounced, he would not lose his fame among the people, since he beaten earlier master ašuƗs in his youth in order to ascend to the level of master, too. Only the winner’s saz would be hung higher than the previous master’s in the coffee house. Among Armenians, examples of famous contests include K`ešiš-Őlli’s victory over T`uǰǰar in Kars and Živani’s victory over Zahri and Havesi in Alek‘sandrapol.

5. Strategies in the bardic contest

Yıldrım Erdener has produced a more detailed synthesis of the major themes of songs in bardic contests and summarized a few “strategies” applied to defeat antagonist(s), which encompass not only what is sung but also the manner of behavior.

---

230 Here the Armenian verb is kapel, “to tie, to bind, to link”.
231 This is what Levonyan describes. In Turkish cases, kissing on the cheek is found. See Erdener, 1995, p. 118.
232 “In coffee houses, the ašuƗs’ sazes are hung according to seniority. To hang a saz above the senior’s would be offensive to him. If an outside ašuƗ comes, his saz must be hung at the lowest level until he wins a contest”. See Levonyan, 1963, p. 190.
during the contest.\textsuperscript{233} Below I divide the material by category and add some of interpretations of my own. Naturally, the different strategies are not always mutually exclusive, but may be to employed together by a contestant.

A. Strategies on the content of songs

a. Question and Riddle: the bard improvises questions and/or riddles as difficult as possible in order to defeat his antagonist(s) when the latter fails to respond. In Northeastern Turkey, the questions and riddles used to be generally religion-oriented, including folk beliefs, while in the Republican period, their contents were largely secularized. They are now improvised “in a witty and humorous way” to “interest and entertain”\textsuperscript{234} the audience.

b. Insulting: the bards use “their traditional knowledge, wit, skill and talent” to “insult each other in funny and witty ways in order to hurt the feelings and lower the self-esteem of the opponent.”\textsuperscript{235} There are three basic types of insult:

1. The opponent’s physical appearance: his torso, neck, arms, height, face, hair or manner of walking and talking.

2. The opponent’s intellectual life, talent, habits and beliefs.

3. The opponent’s family members: his father, grandfather, grandmother, and especially his mother-in-law.

Insulting “is the most entertaining part for the audience.”\textsuperscript{236} But ‘to use this strategy effectively, an ashik must know what his audience considers to be

\textsuperscript{234} Erdener, 1995, p. 120.
\textsuperscript{235} Erdener, 1995, p. 122.
\textsuperscript{236} Erdener, 1995, p. 128.
humorous. He must also understand the area’s social and cultural rules and know what he can or cannot insult. For example, it would be improper to make sexual allusions about the adversary’s immediate female relatives, wife or daughter, but it would not be improper to attack his opponent’s grandmother, mother-in-law or, in rarer cases, his sister; while the opponent’s father or mother could become the target only if they are not alive. Likewise, insults on physical features are exaggerated, “unusually absurd and untrue. If, however, there is a genuine sore spot, it will never be touched or discussed.”

c. Puns: Erdener mentions two examples, in which the verbs have both non-sexual and sexual connotations. It is reasonable to assume that other sorts of puns might be used as well, e.g. homonymy, as explained at the beginning of Chapter 3.

B. Strategies based on the form of songs

a. Avoiding certain letters: the most common case is avoiding labial letters (b, p, f, v, m), known as *dodağdeğmez* “lips don’t touch” in Turkish. This strategy is a particularly difficult challenge to follow as “only a few ashiks have mastered this skill.”

b. Laying a trap for the opponent by using words difficult to rhyme:

1. Such terms may rhyme with only a few words. This is called a *Kapamık ayak*

---

238 Erdener, 1995, p. 137.
242 Ibid..
(locked rhyme) or Dar ayak (tight rhyme) in Northeastern Turkey²⁴³.

2. Words that rhyme mainly with obscene or vulgar terms.

C. Strategies outside the content of the songs

Those involve other aspects of the bardic performance.²⁴⁴ One of them is to employ melodies unfamiliar to the opponent(s), which will make it more difficult for him/them to respond. Many strategies concern performance approach. For example, a humble attitude in the overture creates a good impression of the bard with the audience. If a bard “replies so quickly that he does not need to play his saz before coming up with an answer, it suggests that he is a competent and intelligent artist, able to find quick and witty responses.”²⁴⁵ It is allowed to play the opponent’s melody when he is performing. But some bards might intentionally play it loudly to interrupt the opponent. Or, behaving as if not paying attention to the opponent(s)’ performance might imply that the bard does not care about his opponent(s), since he can beat the latter easily without listening closely to the latter’s composition.

Bardic competitions are expected to be fierce to entertain the audience. However, there is a danger of matters descending to physical attacks in some cases.²⁴⁶ To keep the competition at an entertaining and peaceable level it is first preferable that the performers are not of about the same age since insulting the opponent(s)’ family members can only be mutual in this case. Otherwise the younger bard may be regarded as incompetent for engaging in it or as undermining the social value of showing respect

²⁴³ Erdener, 1995, p. 146.
to the elder. Secondly, the competitors should not be equally competent, otherwise the contest would become one-sided. Thirdly, they should not know each other well or the insults might degenerate into something really offensive and dangerous. In other cases, the bards would usually refuse to compete with each other. However, if such a competition takes place, the less competent and/or younger figure “will acknowledge his opponent’s superiority and will not reply to his insults.”

6. Riddle

While forming part of a formal bardic performance, the riddle may also be found separately in a particular kind of contest. The latter usually takes place in the coffee house also, but is not as fierce as the sort of contest described above, and sometimes involves a gift for the winner who is first to give the correct answer.

Both Artun and Levonyan have descriptions of such riddle contests, the latter’s account being more detailed and dramatized. According to Artun, there can be performances of other genres of aşık songs before and after the riddle is raised or solved respectively, while according to Levonyan’s Armenian cases, the riddle is developed directly by a master aşul, written on a piece of silk and hung in the coffee house to which other bards and dignitaries are invited. After the band plays an opening melody, the contest begins. The riddle is an elaborately fabricated piece of song, which, according to Artun, is not required to be in a specific prosody, and can be only one stanza long. Levonyan’s account indicates it is usually a 3-4 stanza loşma or gazel, and

---

247 Erdener, 1995, pp. 138-139.
possibly involves further indications, e.g. the number of letters in the answer word. The invited bards are required to answer in songs, too. In the Turkish case, the answer to the riddle should be given to the owner of the coffee house by its composer, while in the Armenian case, the master aşuƗ who composes the riddle would himself sit under the riddle and wait for answers from the invited aşuƗs.

H. Themes of the bardic narratives

As noted at the beginning, the hikaye narratives are basically folk romances. There are several sources for these romances:

A. Classical literature, like Laylī and Majnūn, the love tragedy between two pre-Islamic Arab young people from enemy tribes, popular throughout the Near East.

B. Popular stories like Ashik Kerib, the romance between a wandering aşık and his love Shah Senem, both from Tiflis, the aşık’s miraculous return from Aleppo through Saint Khidr’s help, allowing him to keep his promise to marry his love. It was adapted by Lermontov as a short story, and later as a film by Sergei Parajanov.

C. Stories treating historical master aşiks like Qurbani, Abbas Tufarğanlı, etc., of which the major theme is always romantic and anecdotal, even legendary, rather than historical and biographical. Thus, a hikaye about Qurbani puts him in the time of Shah Abbas, the great-great-grandson of Shah Ismail, his true contemporary, and involves Saint Khidr, amulets, and witches in its plot. At the end of the romance, Qurbani overcomes all his difficulties and enemies, marries Perizat, daughter of the
Khan of Ganja, and is appointed khan by his father-in-law.\textsuperscript{250}

D. A bard’s personal creation, like the story \textit{Namuslu kız} (“Virtuous virgin”), composed by Aşık Sabit Müdami for a female audience and recorded by Başgöz, which tells the story of a girl defending her chastity from her wicked step-brother, escaping from her deceived parents through her blood-brother’s caring intervention, and her legendary revenge on her step-brother.\textsuperscript{251}

Apart from romantic themes, heroic plots are also common, yet the latter frequently include romantic elements in the plots, as in the romance of Köroğlu, in which the hero Ruşen Ali, alias Köroğlu, “son of the blind man”, is a Robin Hood-style rebel against the tyrannical overseers, first Bolu Bey, the local ruler, then the sultan’s army. But, at the same time, he is an aşık, and the rebellion plot is intertwined with his love story with Nigâr.\textsuperscript{252} The hikayes, as prose narratives, are not usually written down, and hence are always subject to improvisations and other modifications. A more detailed analysis of the structure of these narratives is not attempted here, since there have been collections and analyses of these romances.\textsuperscript{253} But it is worth mentioning that in a Turkic milieu, these stories are for performance on ordinary days, while during Muharram, Safar, Ramadan, in short, the Muslim holy months according to the Hijri Calendar, the form and content of aşık/aşıq performance might change. It might be

\textsuperscript{250} For the plot outline, see Başgöz, 2008, pp. 256-257.
\textsuperscript{251} Başgöz, 2008, pp. 210-213. For the story plot outline, see pp. 268-269.
\textsuperscript{252} There is no plot outline of this romance in \textit{Hikâye}. These lines, including the spelling of names, follow the 20th century Turkish writer Yaşar Kemal’s adaption in \textit{Üç Anadolu Efsanesi}, 4\textsuperscript{th} ed., Cem Yayınevi, Istanbul, 1971, pp. 5-115.
\textsuperscript{253} For example, the monographs \textit{Hikâye} and \textit{Aşıq sanatiinin poettikası} both contain chapters on the hikaye.
banned during Ramazan,\textsuperscript{254} or as Başgöz reports of Tabriz, Iran in the 1960s, local aşıqs were permitted only to narrate the *Hamzaname*, *Battalname* and *Shahnameh* during the holy months of Muharram and Safar. The first two are epics about Islamic heroes fighting against the infidels, while the *Shahnameh* is the Iranian national epic.\textsuperscript{255}

I. Audience participation in bardic performance

As observed by Başgöz,\textsuperscript{256} the audience in a Hikaye performance plays a role much more active than its counterpart in other musical art forms such as an orchestral concert or opera. The conventions in nineteenth-century European performing spaces, which were imported into the Near East, are not applicable in coffee houses and other traditional settings for aşık performances. Audience numbers, identity, and attitude towards the performance might influence the range and scale of aşık improvisations. Sometimes, they can determine the selection of the Hikaye performance, from which story it is to be performed, its duration (depending on their emotional involvement, the aşık will decide whether to elongate or abbreviate the story), or even to change the plot or the ending in rarer cases. Başgöz reports that in the 1860s, the Kars aşık Tüccari,\textsuperscript{257} together with other aşıqs in the city, by revised all the tragic endings of hikaye romances to happy ones under the extraordinary pressure of a soldier in the audience, who

\textsuperscript{254} It is quite difficult to retrieve the exact source for it. However, Artun mentions that on Thursday nights in Ramazan and winters, some of the Constantinople semâi kahvehanes stayed open. (Artun, 2011, p. 42) Therefore it can be inferred that normally they would have been closed at that time.

\textsuperscript{255} Başgöz, 2008, p. 27.

\textsuperscript{256} This material is largely based on Başgöz, 2008, pp. 201-208.

\textsuperscript{257} Based on dating, it seems unlikely this Tüccari can be identified with the Armenian aşul who was already a master in the 1820s, as mentioned before.
threatened to kill every aşık who told a romance ending in tragedy.

Traditionally, patrons at coffee houses, taverns, etc. were male, regardless of occupation. However, Başgöz reports that on special occasions the aşık might perform exclusively for women in Eastern Anatolia. The tradition endured up to the 1960s, but is no longer active. In such cases the distance between the aşık and his female audience, especially girls, would be set strictly. The aşık would be more cautious about the content and manner of his performance, avoiding obscene words, which might be popular with some male audience as well gestures or expressions that might be considered improper, or even teasing. The female audience would be under their family’s supervision. If anything happened that was construed as offensive by the men of their family, the aşık would be punished. There were also stories and songs specifically designed for a female audience, which would teach them traditional moral requirements for women, like piety, obedience to their husband, etc., as well.

J. Social Functions of the bards and their compositions/performance

Early scholarly literature on the bards tends to focus on their role in social education, mobilization, or disseminating propaganda through their literature and performance. These were the main concerns before WWI in both scholarly and political circles, though viewed with different understanding and purposes, depending on their diverse standpoints. For example, the first enlightened Turkish intellectuals like

---

258 This section is largely based on Başgöz, 2008, pp. 208-213.
259 For example, Levonyan, 1963, pp. 139-145.
Namık Kemal attempted to learn the syllabic prosodies and composing in them, since he considered it as the “pure” Turkish national poetical form in contrast to divan poetry, based on the ‘arūḍ prosody and steeped in Arabic and Persian influence. Armenian aşuƗs like Ḥīvani, Ḥāmali, etc., consciously worked as enlighteners for their people, with their songs as the vehicle for social education. As mentioned above, the sultans of the Tanzimat era made use of aşı̄ks as a vehicle for propaganda through the officially appointed aşı̄klar reisis. Similarly, the Soviet authorities promoted the bardic tradition as an important literary component of the state, which could be employed as popularists for government policy among the mass population. For example, at the opening of the first Congress of Aşı̄qs in Baku in 1928, Səməd ağa Ağamalıoğlu, then chairman of the Central Executive Committee, AzSSR, said, “The aşıq is a mirror of people”, while Ruhulla Axundov, chairman of the Council of People’s Commissars, stated in his speech:

They come from remote villages to the Azerbaijani people … We till now have spent a huge amount of money on the works of propaganda. These aşı̄qs are great propagandists themselves. They live for the people. They play the people’s melody and happiness on their own saz. Aşı̄qs are poets of the poorest part of the people. One of the tasks on our necks is to help the people’s aşı̄qs.

However, the most up-to-date theoretical discussion of this aspect of the bardic

---

263 Namazov’s own note, aşı̄qs.
264 The two’s speeches are all quoted from: Namazov, 1983, pp. 155-156.
genre was advanced by Başgöz. Yet he did not aim at providing an exhaustive list of the bard’s functions, but rather criticized the single-function theory of folklore, arguing that besides a socially and politically conservative integrating role, which is inclusive of all the functions he quoted previously, for example, entertainment, sanction, education, and escape, folklore can be used for disintegration as well, as concluded by William Bascom and illustrated by the Turkish protests of the 1960s.

K. Forms, prosodies, and genres of bardic rhythmic compositions

There are dozens of names for different forms of bardic rhythmic compositions. However, a large number of these titles are simply composite. Moreover, the numerous terms apply to different dimensions as well, based respectively on the prosody, content, and rhetorical methods of the composition. Therefore, it is better to list them under these three categories in turn.

An important principle to bear in mind is that with regard to the names and exact forms of bardic rhythmic compositions there is no strictly one to one correspondence. The same title may apply to different forms, while, less frequently, a certain form may be listed under different terms. It has to be stated at the outset that bardic prosodies form an open category, to which new genres might be added randomly in theory. The

---

266 This section is based primarily on Artun, 2011, pp. 121-152, Levonyan, 1944, pp. 46-79, and 1963, pp. 149-157, as well as Azerbaycan aşıkları ve el şıirleri, vol. 1, pp. XIV-XVI. Unfortunately, no major Azerbaijani publications, even Həkimov’s (Həkimov, 2006, pp. 374-464), has dealt with this issue well. What can be found in Azerbaijani books is merely a list and an explanation of various names of the genres, with the more basic terms marked by a plurality of varieties; while titles according to the prosody and content are simply juxtaposed without any differentiation or attempt to clarify the issue.
267 Levonyan, 1944, p. 46.
concrete items below are only the major forms common in songs of all the three 
languages discussed in this study, or, at least, very popular in two of them, and most 
ideally, favored by Sayat’-Nova. Even less frequent prosodies, if often employed by 
Sayat’-Nova,\textsuperscript{268} will receive a brief discussion, while in the case of the less frequent, 
reference should be made to published materials cited in the footnotes or the 
bibliography.

Preliminary: Rhyme schemes in bardic compositions

Although the number of lines in each stanza (beyt’/beyt/ beyt, borrowed from 
Arabic, meaning “house”, a term Armenian represents by the term tun) may 
vary, the most common number is undoubtly four. Based on ready 
generalizations, the rhyme schemes of five or six line stanzas can be regarded 
as extension of the four-line structure. There are three established types of 
rhyme scheme for a four-line stanza\textsuperscript{269}.

A  abab, cccb, dddb, eeeb
B  aaab, cccb, dddb, eeeb
C  xbyb, cccb, dddb, eeeb

The rhyme scheme of five-line stanza (muhammes) is: aaaaa, aaab, etc\textsuperscript{270}. But 
Armenian muxammaz songs might be composed according to different 
patterns, eg. aaaaa, bbbaa, cccaa.

Similarly, the rhyme scheme of the six-line stanza (museddes) is: aaaaaa,
bubba, cccca, etc\textsuperscript{271}.

Besides rhyme, refrain is a device bards employed more and more in the course of time, a fact most readily shown from the works of sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian așuƗs. Apart from refrains used regularly after a stanza or each line in a stanza, there is a special rhyme scheme for bardic songs with refrains, as concluded by Levonyan\textsuperscript{272}. It is based on rhyme scheme B above, only adding the same refrain to the rhymed lines in the first stanza, i.e., lines 1, 2 and 4; and the last (i.e. fourth) lines of the following stanzas.

1. Prosodies in syllabic meters

Syllabic meter is native to Turkic literatures\textsuperscript{273} and was adapted by Armenian literature from Syriac in the Late Antique period. Therefore, all mainstream bardic prosodies are syllabic.

A. Ɨošma/koşma/qoşma

Composed of eleven-syllable four-line stanzas, this prosody is by far the most popular genre among bards, as readily reflected in the sheer number of songs that feature it in most bards’ collections. It is the technical base for many titles identified by their contents or rhetorical methods to be discussed in the following subsections.

B. dyubeyit`/semâi/gərayli

The term semâi/semayi/səmai applies to more than one genre. The one

\textsuperscript{271} Levonyan, 1944, pp. 48-49.
\textsuperscript{272} Levonyan, 1944, pp. 49-50.
\textsuperscript{273} See Gerhard Doerfer, \textit{Formen der ältern Türkischen Lyrik}, Studia Uralo-Altaica 37, Universitas Szegediensis de Attila József Nominata, Szeged, 1996.
discussed here is based on four-line stanzas consisting of eight-syllable lines. In other respects, it resembles the *Isma/košma/qošma*, which it closely follows in popularity, as witnessed by the numbers of songs composed in this prosody.

C. bayat’i/mâni/bayati

Made up of four-line stanzas with a short line of only seven syllables.

D. divani/divan/divani

It consists of four-line stanzas normally of fifteen syllables; but Artun mentions varieties with fourteen- or sixteen- syllable lines as well.

E. mustezed/müstezat/müstəzad

Its four-line stanza comprises long and short lines consecutively. According to Levonyan, the first and third lines are fourteen-syllable, while the second and fourth have six syllables. The first, third, and fourth lines in the first stanza bear the rhyme, which is subsequently found only in the third and fourth lines, while the first and second lines in the coming stanzas have their own rhymes. Yet according to Artun, the short lines rhyme with the proceeding long lines, and the rhyming lexemes should have the same meaning.

F. muxammaz/muhammes/müxxəmməs

The Arabic term *mukhammas* means “fivesome”. In most cases songs with this title are made up of five-line stanzas with sixteen syllables per line. However, according to Levonyan, four, six, or even eight-line stanzas exist with fourteen, fifteen or even twenty-syllable lines.

2. Prosodies in ‘arūd quantitative meters
Since there is no variation between long and short vowels, it has always been difficult to adapt the Arabo-Persian 'arūḍ quantitative meter fully into Turkic languages, though the principle of long and short syllables is still feasible. The situation for Armenian is similar: although quantitative meters are feasible, they were never applied.

As mentioned above, some bards adopted 'arūḍ meters from divan literature roughly in the seventeenth century. However, since most bards did not receive a higher education, their application of 'arūḍ meters features multiple mistakes in calculating syllable length. Indeed, in Azeri monographs no distinction is made between prosodies in syllabic meters and in quantitative meters at all. In contrast, Levonyan uses the traditional 'arūḍ methods to count “meters” in most prosodies despite what was stated above regarding Armenian prosody. The lack of any explanation of his methodology leaves his work impenetrable. In view of all the above, I omit a listing of 'arūḍ prosodies here, only referencing monographs on the subject.

3. Genres according to content

A. dastan/destan/dastan

This title, deriving from Persian dāstān (“story”), applies to all narrative songs in the bardic tradition. They are mostly composed in 8- or 11-syllable lines like the İoşma/koşma/qoşma or dyubeyit’/semâi/gərayli in prosody, but these

---

276 Artun, 2011, p. 147.
narrative works tend to be much longer than their lyric counterparts.

B. Other titles related to content

Bards give different names to their songs on the basis of content.\textsuperscript{277} Scholars have listed more than a dozen different names for each type of content. However, of all these titles, a few are common to at least two peoples.

1. \textit{ogyutlama/öğütname/ustadamə}

   Songs of admonishment are common to all bards\textsuperscript{278}.

2. \textit{gyuzallama/gözelleme/gözəlləmə}

   Praise of a beauty or belle is another very popular theme.

3. \textit{zavsat`lama/yəşname/vücudnamə}

   This can be interpreted as “pseudo-biographical,” in which the composer describes his/her life, but at best, it is only partially factual, since it portrays the life from cradle to grave. Clearly, events after a certain age must be fictional, and the authenticity of what comes before cannot necessarily be vouched for either.

4. Genres according to rhetorical figures

   A. \textit{t`eǰnis/tecnis/təcnis}

   Arabic \textit{tajnīs} means the application of the rhetorical figure \textit{jinās}, which is

\textsuperscript{277} Erman Artun further divides destans according to their melodies as: destan proper, varsağı and semağ, and gives titles according to the content under several genres: koșma, destan, etc. See Artun, 2011, pp. 136-139. Yet he does not explain how the melodies differ, but describes each subcategory according to the prosody, length and content instead. I have not seen any other scholar offering similar subcategorization. Since Armenian and Azerbaijani scholars do not attribute these names to a certain genre, I do not follow Artun in this procedure.

\textsuperscript{278} I should clarify that the correspondence between Azeri ustadlamə and Turkish/Armenian öğütname/ogyutlama is based on my own judgment according to the description. I had assumed that a cognate title existed in Azeri, but I have yet to encounter it in available Azeriworks.
basically a sort of pun. In the first of two consecutive lines, a certain combination of syllables (not necessarily a single word) has one meaning. When it reappears in the next line, it bears another meaning and is spelled another way (homophone or different division of syllables, which results in different words).

B. muhamme/muamma/qifibond

Riddle song.

C. mulamma

The Arabic term *mulamma* refers to a macaronic song composed in more than one language. Each language in this type of composition should feature in at least a short sentence, not only single words.

D. aliflama/elifname/

Acrostic songs, in which all the letters of the alphabet for a particular language should be named in the correct alphabetical order in a manner “X (name of the letter) for/is Y (a word consisting that letter)”. In medieval and early modern Near East, there is frequently a disjunction between language and alphabet as early literacy was taught via the medium of the community’s sacred scripture, leading to a number of syntheses like “Judeo-Arabic,” “Armeno-Turkish,” etc. Thuse, there was no one-to-one correspondence between a language and its written form at that time. Further proofs can be found in Sayat’-Nova’s works. For example, he has aliflamas in Azeri, in which the abjad is used; but such songs are recorded in both Armenian and
Georgian alphabets, on which see the more detailed discussion in Chapter 3.

E. ĕvel axĕr/evvel-ahır/

Turkish for “First-last,” in which the first and/or last letters of each line should be the same.

F. uch`lama/üçleme/üçləmə

Turkish for “Making three,” in which similar phrases should be repeated three times in the same line of more than one stanza. In most cases, the verbs are the same, while the subject changes.

G. totax dekmaz/dodağ değmez/dodaq dəyməz

Turkish for “Lips don’t touch,”279 in which labial sounds b, p, m, f and v are outlawed.

5. Improvisation

There is no set prosody for improvisation in bardic composition. The bard might use any prosody and incorporate any content when improvising. But it is a very important category of bardic composition, essential in contests.

L. Common themes in bardic rhythmic compositions

Various scholars have attempted to categorize of themes of bardic songs. Artun’s enumeration of fourteen major themes embraces the seven listed by Levonyan.280 These fourteen themes are: love, yearning, society, complaint, nature, humor, death-

tomb, admonition, heroism, praise-denunciation, satire, pre-wrestling, record, religion-Sufism. Meanwhile, Levonyan’s listing of the seven major themes of Armenian aşul songs include: love, religious-moral admonitions, historical/contemporary events, praise of various places (province, city, town, village, historical region or site), social topics, satire, personal life, and the aşul’s own judgment of the world, life, etc.

It is quite obvious that Artun and Levonyan based their categorizations on contemporary norms. Therefore, some themes are absent from their lists, e.g. building Socialism, praise of the October Revolution, Soviet leaders, the Red Army, and exemplary workers, and later peace and friendship between peoples, which were developed during the Soviet period.281 A more inclusive categorization is necessary for a comprehensive study of the bardic tradition but lies outside the purview of this study. Still, a more detailed discussion of the themes appearing in sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries bardic works will be given in the next chapter.

M. The literary classification of the bardic tradition

Studies by Turkish282 and Azerbaijani283 scholars prefer to place aşık literature under the category of folk literature. This assessment, however, was rejected by Garegin Levonyan in all his works, of which the most extensive argument is afforded by a

---

282 For the most extensive argument on this issue, see Umay Günay, Türkiye’de Âşık tarzı şiiri geleneği ve rüya motifî, pp. 1-7, which tends to list the aşık literature as one of the three major sub-categories of Turkish folk literature, side by side with anonymous and tekke literatures.
speech he delivered on September 30, 1928, in which he differentiated ašuƗ literature from folk in great detail. His view on the ašuƗ literature reveals great insight, but some of his views on folklore, some quite debatable. In contrast, Fr. Komitas (1869-1935, born Solomon Solomonean), a famous Armenian musicologist and field-researcher of Armenian folklore at the turn of twentieth century, offers a more reasoned approach to folklore. Here I will present their respective views on their specialized fields.

Fr. Komitas’ view on folklore:

1. Anonymity of authorship: “The name of the author is known in songs which have memorable subjects … But in time, when the song gets older, the author is forgotten or mistaken for another singer, because the song itself is what interests the peasant and not the author; the author can be this person today, another tomorrow.”

2. The lyrics and melodies of folk songs are always developing. “In general, the life of a folk song is relatively short because new songs constantly emerge to take place of the old.”

3. Folk songs can be divided according to their occasion and themes as: peasant songs, ritual songs, epic songs, ballads, ditties, and antunis. Among these types the last is unique to Armenians, as will be further explained in the next

\[284\] It was later published in *HSXH Gitut`yan ev arvesti institute telekapir*, 1930, No.4, pp. 160-178 and included in *Erker*, pp. 258-283. For his other writings concerning this issue, see Levonyan, 1944, pp. 7-8 and 1963, pp. 147-149.


Levonyan’s view on ašuƗ songs:

1. There are always fixed examples of songs, with the makhlas in the last stanza, recorded in davt’ars. Even if they are spread orally, their melodies and subjects do not change or become conflated as in folk songs.

2. The ašuƗ does not compose for his own sake but for the general public. He is a public figure, a professional singer. His songs are more diversified in their contents. AšuƗ songs are obviously individual, but they can be used as vehicles for public opinion, or to reflect others’ life.

3. AšuƗ songs are diversified in forms, with multiplied rules for their prosodies and a complex art of writing. They are always sung to the accompanying of stringed instruments (not continuously but intermittently).

4. AšuƗ tunes have their refined types, which are strictly associated with prosodies. They are set by metrical and formal rules according to the prosodies, which are not merely Armenian, but common to the whole Near East.

Several major contrasts between folklore and ašuƗ songs are apparent from the views of Fr. Komitas and Levonyan, suggesting that aşık literature cannot be interpreted as a branch of folk literature. Building on this differentiation, I think it is important to bear in mind that though mainstream bardic literature employs syllabic prosodies, some bards also utilize ʿarūḍ meters, thus uniting elements of elevated divan literature with genuine Turkic folk poetry.

Secondly, while composed in local spoken vernaculars, bardic songs also feature borrowings from the divan literature as well, not only in form and genre but also content and rhetoric.

Judging from these features, it can be argued that bardic literature forms an intermediate register between elevated poetry and folklore, as Levonyan has shown.288

Section 2 Some peculiarities of the Armenian ašuƗ tradition

After discussing the general history of the bardic tradition, this section focuses on various aspects of training, ambience, and performance that distinguish the Armenian ašuƗ tradition.

A. Training

Two major aspects of training deserve mention here. The first is the use of the Armenian language in training Armenian ašuƗs, which rather implies that both master and disciple are ethnically Armenian. The second concerns inter-ethnic training. As mentioned above, the fact of Armenian ašuƗs studying with Turkic masters is amply documented, however, no example seems forthcoming of an Armenian master training Turkic disciples.

Regarding the qualification process, the most significant variation is the role St. John the Precursor and the monastery dedicated to him in Mush play in Armenian ašuƗ tradition instead of Khidr.

B. Potential Armenian religious ağuşs

We have noted the presence of several Sufi bards in an Islamic context. This generates the question as to whether parallel cases existed of Armenian clerics training and performing as an ağuş. This question involves two major Armenian poets Nañaš Yovnat’ān (1661-1722) and Pağtazar Dpir (c. 1683-c. 1768) who are often portrayed as ağuşs in monographs on early modern Armenian literature. But in my opinion, it is very questionable to call them “ağış”’s, if judging by their experience and works. Whether they meet the criteria of a bard would determine whether their works would be discussed in the following chapters.

The main argument adduced for calling them ağuşs is that they compose in meters made popular by ağuşs on themes popular in ağuş literature. However, poetic form in and of itself is not sufficient to identify an author as an ağuş. No evidence exists that either Nañaš Yovnat’ān or Pağtazar Dpir studied bardic performance formulae with an established bard, or that they performed anywhere as a bard. Our knowledge of their life is limited and concentrates on their ecclesiastical career. Nañaš Yovnat’ān was a deacon in the Armenian church and served in that capacity in a number of places in then Iranian Southern Caucasia. In contrast, Pağtazar Dpir was born in Constantinople,

---


290 Asatur Mnac’akanyan and Šušanik Nazaryan, Nañaš Hovнат’ān: banastec’ut’yunner, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1951, p. XXVI. For Pağtazar Dpir, the only comment I have found is from Levonyan: “by his many songs he is a talsac’ … and by many songs also an ağuş, as a Şirin, a Jivani” (as quoted from Šušanik Nazaryan: Pağtazar Dpir: Tağıkner, Sovetakan Groh Hratarakuč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1985, p. 53). However, without the context, it is not clear whether Levonyan is merely using figurative speech here.
took holy orders at an early age and was always devoted to church activities, ended as a high-ranking clerk. Consequently, it is difficult to imagine he had the opportunity to become a formal disciple under the instruction of a master bard.

Granted the improbability of their training and functioning as aşıls, their works also do not easily align them with aşıls either. While Nağaş Yovnat’an’s love lyrics are written in aşıl meters, in colloquial Armenian, and in an aşıl style, his works of moral-religious admonition are all composed in monorhymed stanzas, a form common in medieval Armenian tağı lyrics, but very rare in aşıl works. Moreover, some of his satirical works are constructed as whole with no division into stanzas and employ rhyme schemes that do not conform to any aşıl rhyme scheme either. As for Paftasar Dpir, his published works reflect both pure classical Armenian, hybrid classical Armenian and Turkish, and pure Turkish. Furthermore, his songs are composed chiefly for church milieus rather than secular performance. Moreover, no matter how close his meters fall to bardic examples, the tone of the compositions is solemn, distinguished both from the colloquial and popular bardic style. Based on these facts, I include Nağaş Yovnat’an’s songs in bardic styles in the following chapters, where necessary, but generally exclude those of Paftasar Dpir.

C. Performance

Apart from issues of some Armenian bards employing multiple languages in their repertoire and inscribing songs in their dav’tars in the Armenian and Georgian script, it is significant that the saz occupies a different status among Armenian aşıls. For Turkic aşık/aşıqs it is the essential instrument, but among Armenians seems not to have
enjoyed anything like the same prestige. Thus, in a note on the first Armenian song in his Davt’ar, Sayat’-Nova claims that he masters three stringed instruments, the kamancha, tar, and tambur,\textsuperscript{291} without naming the saz. Similarly, according to contemporary oral sources collected by Aram Eremean, eighteenth-to-nineteenth-centuries Isfahani Armenian ašușs like Łul Yovhannēs and Yart’un-Ölli took chongur along with them. Also, in a photo of the famous nineteenth-century Armenian ašușs Ėjvani and Ėjamali, the former is playing the kemenche, while the latter the santur.\textsuperscript{292}

During the Soviet Era quite large ašuș ensembles were established in Armenia. While those included the saz alongside the tar, santour, kamancha, kamani and tav kamani, when performing on a smaller scale, the saz might disappear from the scene, leaving tars, kamanchas, santurs etc. in front, as is paralleled in some contemporary performances.\textsuperscript{293}

Forms of Armenian ašuș performance lack the quasi-official oand quasi-religious performance and feature only popular and secular forms. Levonyan provides descriptions of Armenian ašușs’ performance in coffee houses, random street performances, and the procedures governing two sorts of contests (banavēč), oral (banavor) and distant (hefaka), in his book.\textsuperscript{294} The latter is a contest among ašușs who live in different places. When one (side) composes a song, which might be overtly or covertly challenging, or mocking against certain other ašuș(s), the latter party would

\textsuperscript{291} Quotation and translation will appear later in the section about Sayat’-Nova’s life.
\textsuperscript{292} So far the earliest source of this photo that I have seen is Levonyan, 1944, p. 27.
\textsuperscript{293} See, for example, the website of the Sayat-Nova Cultural Union, \url{http://sayat-nova.org/category/news/}, as retrieved on Sept. 30, 2015.
\textsuperscript{294} Levonyan, 1944, pp. 80-84 and 1963, pp. 196-197.
compose a song in response. The process of challenge and response was carried out by correspondence, in the public press, or in the oral dissemination of their songs. It can hardly be called a performance, since it does not necessarily involve any audience. As it is absent from discussion in Turkish monographs, it is uncertain whether it existed in Turkic milieus.

Section 3 Examination of some details in Sayat’-Nova’s life and after

This section will examine only those traceable details mentioned by Sayat’-Nova himself in connection with the general features already discussed in this chapter. Much of the discussion is based on the bard’s Davt’ar, both the songs and his own comments, of which Azeri song No. 81 occupies a preponderate position. This song is a vujut’lama, or “pseudo-autobiographical” song according to its genre. As discussed in the treatment of this type of bardic genre, it must be used with caution. The sections possibly containing hints about his training and qualification as an ašuƗ mainly encompass his adolescence and early adulthood:

......
Ōn bir ilum t’amam öldi č’un k’i ḍlaǰałam ahlu,
Ōn ik’i ilum t’amam öldi t’ap’šurdilar ustak’ara.

Ōn uč’ ilum t’amam öldi örandum t’amam sanat’,
Ōn durd ilum t’amam öldi ustama et’urdum xalat’,
() ᪆n beš ilum t’amam öldi manšur ēt’ tum ał u łara.295

295 This line is strange, since according to the rhyme scheme, it should be about his sixteenth year. But if it was, the number al’i (six) would have broken the syllable rule.
Ön ed[i] ilum t’amam öldi hala ölmamišam dastan,
Ön sak’iz ilum t’amam öldi gordum gul u gulustan,
Ön doluz ilum t’amam öldi gezdum Habaş u Hindistan,
Igirmi ilum t’amam öldi lal sat’aram sovdagara.

Igirmi beşum t’amam öldi girip’ meydana uzaram, 
......

(“My eleventh year passed, since (it is time) I became (truly) part of the family.
My twelfth year passed, they entrusted me to a master craftsman.
My thirteenth year passed. I learned the trade to perfection.
My fourteenth year passed. I sent my master a robe of honor.
......
My fifteenth year passed. I threw black and white scattered (all about).  
My seventeenth year passed. I had not yet become a public-reciter.
My eighteenth year passed. I perceived the Rose and the Rose-garden.
My nineteenth year passed. I journeyed to Abyssinia and India.
My twentieth year passed. I sell rubies to a merchant.
My twenty-fifth year passed. Entering the public square, I half-closed my eyes in rapture.”)

One of the keywords here is the term dastan “story/story-teller” in the line about seventeen-year old. If we follow Dowsett’s interpretation as public-reciter, with regard to the bardic tradition, it can apply to performing bard as well. Building on that, it would seem that what Sayat’-Nova describes in the previous lines does not concern his aşuũ identity at all, but his other trade. This fits the life-situation of many bards who were not full-time performers, as explained in section 1. However, if we follow Baxč’inyan’s translation as “famous”, that would yield very little about Sayat’-Nova’s aşuũ career. In

---

296 All the transcription here follow Baxč’inyan, 1987, pp. 262-265.
297 According to Dowsett’s explanation, most probably this line means that he became literate at this age. Dowsett, 1997, p. 63.
regard to both possibilities, the exact meaning of this line seems difficult to construe.

In contrast, the line about his twenty-fifth year seems more explicit. There are different interpretations of the original text, but whether we follow Dowsett in transcribing the final verb as “suzaram”, and interpreting the line as “Entering the public-square, I half-close my eyes in rapture”; or Baxč`inyan in interpreting the verb as “uzaram” and rendering “I exert effort in the arena,” the line appears to present the “I” performing in the public square, which is quite standard for an ašuƗ. On this basis it can be asserted that Sayat’-Nova had already become a performing ašuƗ at this age. If the first conjecture for his seventeenth year is correct, then we might be right in inferring an eight-year period of ašuƗ training in the interim. Such an apprenticeship is not unusual for ašuƗ training either, as noted in the section on ašuƗ training.

After his years of ašuƗ training in the vujut`lama, Sayat’-Nova does not mention his master ašuƗ by name. But in notes to Armenian songs Nos. 4 and 5 in the Davt`ar, the bard states that these songs follow the mode of an Azeri song by a certain Dosti. Most Armenian scholars accept Axverdean’s opinion that this Dosti might represent the master AšuƗ with whom Sayat’-Nova had studied. With regard to the latter’s ethnic identity Armenian scholars claim Dosti is Armenian, while Azerbaijanis regard him as their compatriot. Evidence on the Armenian side is that Axverdean declares that a tombstone from the Xojivank` Armenian cemetery in Tiflis bears this name, while

301 Axverdean, 1852, preface, p. VI. However, he did not give the image of that tombstone. Since the Khojivank` cemetery has been leveled by large from the Soviet period well into Georgia’s new independent era, it is hardly possible for scholars to trace this so-called “evidence” now.
no concrete proof is adduced by the Azerbaijanis. The name Dosti means “of friend” or “friendship” in Persian and must refer to the bard’s stage name, one that both Turkic and Armenian bards might have borne. Moreover, Axverdean’s identification of the ašuƗ Dosti in Sayat’-Nov’a’s Davt’ar as the same AšuƗ Dosti who was interred in Xoǰivank’ cemetery also lacks corroboration. Hence the issue remains moot.

If Sayat’-Nov’a’s ašuƗ training and his master bard are difficult to pin down on the basis of extant written sources, his musical ability is definitely testified in his note to Armenian song No. 1:

… Yis mlısnu vurt’i Arut’ins, pstuc’ iňće’ori yarsun tarin glus dri amenan xafin, ama surb Karapeti karof솔’ enov sovrec’a k’amançe’en u c’ongurn u [t’]amburen.302

(… I am Arutin, son of a pilgrim to Jerusalem, have been working on all songs for thirty years from childhood, with the empowerment of St. John the Precursor, I learned the kamancha, chongur, and tambour.)

Unfortunately, it is one of the very few solid data on Sayat’-Nov’a’s ašuƗ career. Other details like his possible parallel career as a mill weaver or dyer, argued for from his frequent reference to textiles,303 the reason for his becoming an ašuƗ, the revealing dream and pilgrimage, his promotion to court, etc., may be permanently lost.

Judging from Armenian ašuƗ songs composed after Sayat’-Nov’a, it is quite safe to assume that they did not undergo any influence from his works. No later Armenian ašuƗ

302 Baxč’in yan, 1987, p. 15.
303 “It is a common tradition in Armenia that Sayat’-Nov’a was a weaver by trade (probably by virtue of the mention of the khalat’) or a dyer (by virtue of the master of ‘white and black’ at the age of 15 (or 16) claimed in the poem) … it is far from improbable that Sayat’-Nov’a learned the trade of the weaver, a major industry in Georgia for centuries …”. Dowsett, 1997, pp. 8-10.
ever used foreign vocabulary as extensively as him. Indeed, at least from ašuƗ Shirin, who flourished in the 1840s, some Armenian ašuƗs attempted to compose in purer Armenian idiom, a movement which trended later in the century. Even among Tiflis Armenian ašuƗs who flourished only a few decades after him, his influence is not easy to find, judging from the existent songs of Šamê`i Melk`ō and K`ič`ik-Nova. Satirical works occupy a large proportion of the former’s existent works which differs significantly from Sayat`-Nova, and might be used to explain their differences in style. Meanwhile, only eight of the latter’s songs are preserved, in which the style is quite conventional, whether the topic is love or religious themes. Nevertheless, since the majority of his songs might have perished together with his davt`ar, which was burnt by his wife at his deathbed, it might be questionable to judge his true style on these eight songs only. Later in the nineteenth century, new themes, many expressing patriotism, freedom, equality, and the promotion of knowledge, in association with nationalism, made their way into Armenian ašuƗ songs, culminating in the works of Živani.

Sayat`-Nova’s relatively light influence on nineteenth century Armenian ašuƗs may in part be attributed to the prevailing conditions of life. Before the introduction of modern communication, the majority of bards were local, with only a few of them attaining regional significance, while their musical legacy was temporary. As new skillful bards emerge, the old would fall into oblivion. Consequently, the fact that Sayat`-Nova still lingered in the memory of Tiflis Armenian elders in Gërërg Axverdean’s time, a century after his forcible retirement to the monastery, is itself very
unusual.

The general profile of the bardic tradition, the distinctive features of the Armenian ašuƗ tradition, traceable information about Sayat`-Nova’s career as an ašuƗ, and a few other peripheral questions have been discussed above. In the following chapters, I will address the literary aspects of his songs in the general context of sixteenth to eighteenth century bardic songs in order to elucidate how conventional or individual/innovative the former are.
Chapter 3

Sayat’-Nova’s Armeno-Azeri compositions in the general context of sixteenth to eighteenth centuries bardic literature

Since existing studies of Sayat’-Nova have not provided a detailed contextualization of his works within the broader development of sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries bardic literature an overall sketch will be attempted here. Subsequently, I will consider the relation of Sayat’-Nova’s Armeno-Azeri works within the wider category of contemporary Armeno-Turkish ašuf literature.

Section 1 General features of sixteenth to eighteenth centuries bardic literature

The primary characteristics of Early Modern bardic literary works can be described as follows.

The language employed (Turkic, Armenian, Georgian, etc.) largely retained its simplicity and vernacular affinities. Only a very few bards were impacted by regional traditions of elevated poetry, such as Ömer and Gevheri by the Perso-Turkic tradition and Yart’un Öili by Armenian talaṣaq’ut’iwn, hence approaching in turn the language of Ottoman Turkish divan poetry or classical Armenian. Moreover, although formal elements (genres and prosodies) became more diversified and complex, the most popular forms everywhere remain the quatrain of eight- or eleven-syllable lines (semayi/semai/görayli or Iošma/kоšma/qošma).

The most popular themes are oriented towards love and religious and ethical
admonition oriented. Moreover, literary devices in bardic literature are far simpler than those of elite divan or ecclesiastical literature. As explained in Chapter 2, the *tejnis* genre relies on *jinās*, a sort of word game. But this literary device is essentially a form of pun, and only a few of its varieties are used in bardic literature, less than those typical of Divan literature; while other forms of word games in elevated Perso-Turkish literature, e.g. the *qalb* (anagram)\(^1\) and *ishtiqāq* (paronymy)\(^2\), hardly exist in bardic literature.

Section 2 Figures of Speech

On the basis of an extensive reading of sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries bardic literature, I have isolated the most popular figures of speech employed in that corpus. For clarity, I cite the corresponding terms from Arabic, Persian, and Turkish rhetoric where appropriate. Most of the examples of these figures have been drawn from Sayat`-Nova’s Azeri songs.

A. Phonetic Figures:

1. Alliteration\(^3\)

2. Dodağdeğmez in Turkish, or Wāsi` al-shaftein in Arabic (not moving the tongue) applies both to the literary device and the songs that exploit it.\(^4\)

Sayat`-Nova combined both alliteration and dodağdeğmez and even *jinās*

---

2 Gibb, 1900, p. 120.
3 There is no comparable device in Divan literature, nor in Ottoman Turkish.
4 This genre should contain no labial sounds (p, b, f, v, m).
(homonymy) (to be explained below) in Azeri song No. 70.\(^5\) Moreover, the lexeme t`ar exploited for alliteration, which serves both as Persian tār/Azeri tar “string” and an abbreviated form of Armenian t`arm “fresh, new, green”, is repeated in each line twice or thrice, in some cases in a semantic role, but not in others, at the bard’s discretion. The resulting song is more of a word game than a serious piece of literature and hence was most probably improvised for a contest, rendering it one of Sayat`-Nova’s most difficult songs.\(^6\) Granted its characteristics, it is hard to translate into another idiom, however I provide the first two stanzas by way of illustration. The present rendering is purely experimental, aiming to convey the literal meaning in English without attempting to preserve its complex form. It depends heavily on the parallel Armenian translation in Baxč`inyan’s 1987 collection, especially for the homonymies:

\[
\begin{align*}
T`ar \ ła\̄shi \ t`ar & \ (gozi \ t`ar \ sia \ sia), \\
T`ar \ t`ahrin & \ degiš[ti] \ t`ar \ uzal \ uzal, \\
T`ar \ xali \ t`ar \ hindi & \ t`ar \ sia \ sia, \\
T`ar \ t`akrar & \ ła\̄lat`ti, \ t`ar \ uz \ al \ uz \ al. \\
\end{align*}
\]

\[
\begin{align*}
T`ar \ ač`ildi \ t`ar & \ č`ič`agin \ t`ar \ č`igin, \\
T`ar \ inǰit`ti & \ t`ar \ ę\̄llarin \ t`ar \ č`igin, \\
T`ar \ nazani & \ t`ar \ geindi \ t`ar \ č`igin, \\
T`ar \ ayrildi, \ gezar \ t`ar \ uzal \ uzal. \\
\end{align*}
\]

(Tender eyebrows, tender eyes, come together,
The tender white complexion on the face just changed.
The vivid mole as black as an Indian,
Repeatedly polluted the spotless honor.

Her flower just wildly blossomed,
Her hair just hurt her shoulders,

\(^5\) Baxč`inyan, 1987, pp. 244-245.
\(^6\) As the endnote to this song comments: Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 491.
Her graceful newly worn gilded attire,
She newly departed, wandering far, far away.)

3. Concatenation (zincirleme in Turkish) is a figure in which the last word or phrase in
one line is repeated at the beginning of the next. The last word/phrase of the previous
stanza becomes the first word/phrase in the next, while in the first stanza, the last
word/phrase of the second line should be repeated at the beginning of the third line also.
To illustrate this, I cite the first two stanzas of Sayat`-Nova’s Azeri song No. 32.⁷ No
examples are currently extant from earlier aşıks, but presumably Sayat Nova was
building on a pre-existing tradition.

Vat`anumdan aštum sonam gormaga,
Baxtum, bezanmišti, man oldtum t`alas,
T`alasam allumdan, salam vermaga,
Dedum dili šak`ar, labua bal as.

Bal asmiš labina, šak`ar na desam?
……

(I left my hometown to see my chick,
I looked, she was astonished, I speeded up.
I speeded up because of my wit, in order to greet (her),
I said, “Sugar-tongued One, let honey flow from your lips!”

Honey flew from her lips, what if I say sugar?
……)

B. Semantic Figures:

1. Macaronic verse (talmī in Arabic) relates to composing a poem in more than one
language. A song written with this technique is called mulamma`. The most famous
example of this figure is Sayat`-Nova’s quadrilingual song⁸ in five quatrains. The first

---

consists of eight hemistichs, of which the first and third lines begin in Georgian and end in Persian, while the second and fourth begin in Azeri and end in Armenian, as illustrated below. Meanwhile, each line of the next four quatrains is composed in a different language in the order Georgian, Persian, Azeri, and Armenian. Here I quote Baxč’inyan’s transliteration and Dowsett’s English translation of the first stanza. 

Es ḥa momivida? Bibin č’i k’ardem!
Var get’ boyni burug, tanen dus arac,
Čkva cavagebine az šeši nardem,
Divana g[e]ziram, banen dus arac.


2. Comparison (tashbih in Arabic) relates to both simile and metaphor according to Gibb. Its forms in bardic songs are simpler than those of elevated poetry. Examples are too numerous to cite.

3. Hyperbole (mubālagha)

Javahir čšxunda man ölmišam t’uʃ,
Jami łězěl idum, dard čt’i p’irinʃ.

([I was] a jewel, through love for you I became cast iron. I was a gold chalice, pain turned [me] into bronze.)

10 Gibb, 1900, p. 111.
11 Moreover, Sayat’-Nova’s innovative tropes will be discussed in detail in Chapter 4, section 3.
4. Allusion (talmîn) is not a very popular figure of speech. It seems only those better-educated bards like Sayat’-Nova employed it more in their works. Sayat’-Nova’s allusions might come from Scripture, religious traditions, or literary masterpieces. Famous lovers from Near Eastern literature, like Leyli and Majnun, Shirin and Farhad might be used randomly to allude the ardor of love. Biblical or religious allusions mostly appear in songs of moral-religious admonition. The following example refers to Moses’, or Aaron’s rod.

Ne alajdur ḏiz ƚuru yašadi.¹³

(What wood was it? It was dry, but growing!)

5. Homonymy (jinãs) is a sort of pun. In the first volume of his History of Ottoman poetry, Gibb offers the following general description:

Tejnîs (‘Homonymy’ or ‘Paronomasia’) is a variety of pun and one of the greatest favorites among rhetorical figures, subdivided into a large number of classes. It consists of the employment of words with the same or similar forms and sounds.¹⁴

Many of these rhetorical figures are required by particular genres. For example, alliteration is required by aval-axêr (first-last), concatenation by zinjîrlama (lit. placing in chains). Meanwhile, some genres reflect the figure they require, e.g. talmîn and mulamâma, jinãs and tajnîs, and Dodağdeğmez. Still, tropes are the most common figures in bardic compositions. In this regard I would contend that there is a tendency

---

¹⁴ Gibb, 1900, p. 116.
in Armenian and Azerbaijani ašuƗ /aşıq works to intensify their use gradually over time. In the works of early Azerbaijani aşıqs like Qurbani and early Armenian aşuƗs like Łul Egaz the frequency of tropes is not very high, usually only one per line, and lines with tropes are more often interspersed between narrative lines. However, in the works of eighteenth-century aşuƗ /aşıqs, especially in the middle stanzas of love songs, it is not unusual for one line to feature more than one trope, and two or three lines with tropes to occur in a given quatrain.

Of these four major aspects of sixteenth to eighteenth cc. bardic literature, language and literary devices are more intimately interrelated than form and theme, as is easily predictable, since bardic literature reflects a lower register than elevated literature, as indicated in the previous chapter.

Section 3 Differences in genre distribution in sixteenth to eighteenth centuries Turkish, Azerbaijani, and Armenian bardic compositions

Most sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries bards adhered to syllabic meters, as is true of the overwhelming majority of minor Turkish aşıks, who utilized them almost exclusively, together with the famous Pir Sultan Abdal and Karacaoğlan. Although only aşıks Ömer and Gevheri bore the significant influence of divan literature, thanks to their rich output, the proportion of songs in ʿarūḍ meters in sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries Ottoman Turkish aşık literature attains a level disproportionate to the total number of Turkish aşıks composing in them from that period. Presumably these two bards’ extensive use of ʿarūḍ derives from their family, education, and Sufi background, in
contrast to all other early modern Turkish aşıks whose background is known to us. Furthermore, the affinities with different Sufi orders many Turkish aşıks possessed may also have contributed to the difference in their themes as well, as will be discussed later.

In contrast, the use of ʿarūḍ prosody was never extensive among Azeri aşıqs of this period who had a penchant for more technically complex genres in syllabic meter, like tecnis/təcnis and muamma/qıfılбан. The most striking examples derive from the famous Azerbaijani aşıqs Qurbani and Xəstə Qasim.\textsuperscript{15} This diversity seems to point to stylistic differences between bards in the Ottoman and Iranian spheres.

The validity of the above finding is supported by the bifurcation of the output of ethnic Armenian aşuls on both sides of the border in alignment with their Turkish and Azerbaijani counterparts. However, the extremely small pool of works by early modern Armenian aşuls, which amounts to only about a dozen songs in each category, demands further investigation, such as editing all Yart’un Ölli’s sixty-five Turkish songs rather than only the ten published by Aram Eremean in the 1940s, in order to define the issue with more assurance.

In addition, early modern Armenian aşuls in the Iranian sphere exhibit a preference for the muxammaz, a type of song with five-line stanzas. As suggested by the name and its popularity among Muslim poets in general, it seems likely that the genre emerged from an Arabic rather than Armenian matrix. However, though hardly represented in the works of early modern Turkish aşıks and only marginally more frequent in the

\textsuperscript{15} Qurbani’s collection includes 8 təcnis and 3 qıfılban, for which, see Kazimov, 1990, pp. 151-164. Xəstə Qasim’s collection includes 16 təcnis and 48 qıfılban, for which, see Hüseyn İsmayılov et al., \textit{Xəstə Qasim}, Nurlan, Baku, 2010, pp. 105-115, 146-207.
Azerbaijani case (mostly from the eighteenth century alone), the form is frequently found in Armenian ašuļ songs of Isfahan and enjoyed great popularity among Tiflis Armenian ašuļs.

Another notable contrast between the three bardic traditions relates to the number of stanzas normative in their song production. In general, the norm for short bardic songs ranges from three to five stanzas. In the Ottoman sphere, songs with both four and five stanzas are common in the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries, while three-stanza songs are much rarer. Meanwhile, Azerbaijani aşıqs more frequently composed songs with three or four stanzas, while five is much more frequent among later Armenian aşuļs, whether composing in Armenian or Azeri. This relates both to Isfahani Armenian aşuļs like Yart’un Ölli and Tiflis Armenian aşuļs, among whom it was especially popular, in the period from the middle or late eighteenth century. In contrast, the earliest Isfahani Armenian aşuļ Łul Ėgaz who flourished in the late seventeenth century and other early Isfahani Armenian aşuļs, prefer four-stanza songs over five-stanza variants, while three-stanza songs were not very frequent from the beginning. However, until the late eighteenth century it was still common to find three-stanza songs by Azerbaijani aşıqs.

Section 3 thematic differences in sixteenth to eighteenth cc. Turkish, Azerbaijani, and Armenian bardic compositions

Clear differences distinguish the distribution of themes in early modern Turkish, Azerbaijani, and Armenian bardic compositions. Similarly, distinctive sectarian
connotations are observable in the works of Ottoman aşiks, e.g. Pir Sultan Abdal, who belonged to certain Sufi orders only found within the Ottoman borders in this period. In contrast, the sub-genre shah-Khatai is distinctively Iranian. Songs in this sub-genre must include praise to Shah Ismail I, founder of the Safavid dynasty and head of the Safavi order. Meanwhile, Christian themes treated in religious songs by Armenian aşuƗs from both the Ottoman and Iranian domains will be explored in the coming paragraphs.

The following are the primary themes developed in sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries bardic composition, beginning with those most frequently employed.

A. Secular Love

The three most popular subdivisions of the theme of love in the bardic repertoire are:

1. Eulogistic description of the beloved’s physical beauty, predominantly her static appearance, in some cases involving dress, ornaments, and perfume, and less frequently the sweetness of her voice and the elegance of her movements.

2. The bard’s passion as lover for his beloved.

3. The bard’s suffering and longing as lover for his beloved, mostly after their separation whether forced or voluntary on the beloved’s part, and his desire or entreaty for the beloved to relent and, more often than not, to effect a reunion.

Of these three topics the first is by far the most popular, as it is required by the sub-genre güzelleme (panegyric of female beauty) of the koshma, while the others are usually presented together, since the bard’s suffering forms the major theme of the sub-genre şikayətnamə (work of complaint)\(^\text{16}\). Moreover, portraying the suffering of love

\(^{16}\) This term is seen only in Azerbaijani publications, e.g. Hüseyn İsmayılov et al.: Xəstə Qasım,
automatically implies the presence of passion as well. Combination of the first two 
themes, or all three, is also very often interwoven in one bard’s songs as well. However, 
in regard to the form of songs treating such topics, the following are the three most 
common:

1. Direct first person presentation, ie. In the voice of the bardic lover.

2. Reported dialogue between the lover in the first person and the beloved in the third 
person, mostly as direct quotation, as styled in Turkish as *dedim dedi* and in Armenian 
as *èsi èsaw* (“I said, she said”).

3. Allegory of the rose and nightingale, which may be in the form of a dialogue between 
the rose and nightingale or between the lover and the nightingale.

B. Religious-Moral topics

1. Praise of religious figures involves eulogy of Imams (mostly Ali), Ismail Shah 
Khaṭā’ī, or the founder of the order to which a Sufi aşık/aşıq belongs and Christian 
 hierarchs like Šamč`i Melk`ō’s *Ov srbazan Yosep` minj kat` ulikus* “Oh Most Reverend 
Joseph our Catholicos”

2. Divine love in the Early Modern period almost certainly bears Sufi connotations, 
frequently expressed in the motif of the moth and the flame associated with the doctrine 
of self-annihilation in the process of total union with the Divine. The fact that this 
concept is rejected by the Judaeo-Christian tradition explains the lack of representation

---

Nurlan, Baku, 2010, passim. I have not even found a comprehensive explanation of it in any 
monograph.

17 Praises for all these persons can be found in Pir Sultan Abdal’s songs. For the introduction and 
quotations, see: pp. 81-90.

of this theme in verse composed by Christian Armenian bards. Similarly, on the rare occasions where the moth and flame motif is employed by the latter, the connotation in the majority of cases is to secular love alone. This contrast is also highlighted in depictions of the gender of the beloved. Since God is conceived as male in the three Abrahamic religions, any reference to female physicality or conventional character traits (Armenian nazani “graceful” or Turkic nazlı/nazlu “coquettish”) cogently indicate that the portrayal is of a woman as beloved. Consequently, a review of love songs produced by Christian Armenian ašuƗs reveals that most of those belong to the latter category, and hence are secular in type.

3. The Yaşname/zavsat’lama/vücudnamə, as noted in Chapter 2, possesses a pseudo-autobiographical character. Since one of its formative elements is a concluding admonishment on the transience of life, I classify it as a subgenre of the moral-religious category. The most important single manifestation of this genre is undoubtedly Sayat’-Nova’s vujut’lama.

C. Songs for bardic competition, or vocal duel

Since the songs for bardic competition, or vocal duel described in Chapter 2 are improvised in most cases, the themes might be assigned ad hoc at the organizers’ or bards’ discretion. Therefore, if a song is not explicitly stated as being for competition, it can be difficult to identify, as in the case of some of Sayat’-Nova’s songs discussed in the last section of this chapter. Since the purpose of these songs is to overcome a

rival, praise and boasting on the part of the bard about himself or those siding with him and depreciating or jeering at the other side are common for such songs, as they constitute one of the strategies in such competitions.

D. Complaint

The Complaint is usually directed at one’s unlucky fate, for example, Sayat’-Nova’s Ašxorės mē p’anja ra ē (My world is a prison). Exceptions I have observed include the composition ZIjum amusnut’ean “Regret about Getting Married” by the Armenian ašuł Łul Yovhannēs’ which is written in the voice of a woman lamenting her unsuccessful marriage, the Armenian ašuł Łul Ėgaz’s Č’kay dard imac’ol (No one understands (my) pain), and the Azeri aşq Abbas Tufarğanlı’s Bəyənməq (Unlikeable), which features social critique on a different topic in each verse.

E. Satire

Satire can be directed at the foibles of persons in the ašuł’s circle or a wellknown contemporary, such as Šamč’i Melk’ō’s song beginning Ankač ara govkd asim Talavrēc’i şun Arak’il (Listen, I ‘m singing your praise, Arak’il, dog from Talavr).

F. The composer’s personal experience

Songs describing the composer’s personal experience treat subjects like Qurbani’s seasonal migration or a longer journey, as, for example, Łul Arzuni’s Mer askn yimarač’el an (Our nation have become fools), which presents an account of his journey

21 Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 77-79.
23 Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 271-274 (with a variant).
to India in which he met with many misfortunes.\textsuperscript{25}

G. Description of certain places

The description of certain places mainly applies to praise of natural beauty or the prosperity of a city. A good example is provided by the Armenian ašuł Čerean Ōğlu Minas’ song commencing Elbark’ jezi ban mi patmem (Brothers, let me tell you something) that describes an Ottoman metropolis, probably to be identified as Constantinople.\textsuperscript{26}

H. Description of certain items

The description of certain items may be didactic, as in Lul Arzuni’s Grič’ “Pen”,\textsuperscript{27} or lyrical, as a number of bards’ songs on their musical instrument, e.g. Sayat’-Nova on his K`amanch’a, or Qurbani on his saz.\textsuperscript{28}

I. Feast with entertainment (majles)

Songs for a feast with entertainment (majles) are similar to songs for competition in that they might also be improvised, with the topic decided ad hoc. Still discernible songs of this kind usually talk about the magnificence of the feast, the joy of drinking and gathering, the beauty of the attending ladies or dancing girls, etc., like Yart’un Ölli’s Tal i veray selanoy “Song at table”.\textsuperscript{29}

J. Far from one’s hometown or village

Songs on being far from one’s hometown or village can be divided ethnicly. In

\textsuperscript{25} Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 92-98.
\textsuperscript{26} Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 343-350.
\textsuperscript{27} Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 85-87.
\textsuperscript{28} “Ağacdandır”, Qurbani, in Kazımov, 1990, p. 55.
\textsuperscript{29} Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 260-261.
Armenian cases, such songs treat the panduxt or Ḩarib, i.e., the economic emigrant as in the taẗ or other Armenian literary genres. Yearning for one’s family predominates in such songs, while the status of a helpless figure in a foreign environment is often described. A good example is provided by Yart’un Ölli’s Larib mards larib Ḩurbat’ aṣlarhi “Stranger man roaming in the world”30. In Turkic, or more exactly, Azeri cases,31 it is more often yearning for one’s home village after leaving it, as in Qurbani’s case,32 without necessarily describing the cause for the departure.

K. Vituperation

The only certain vituperative song I have noted is directed at a specific figure, that of Qurbani against a certain vizier.33

L. Humor

The humorous song (yalanlama) is a sort of humorous or satirical song made up of absurd and illogical statements. From this period, it is only represented by one song from the Armenian aşuf Yart’un Ölli.34 The third stanza is reproduced here a specimen of the absurdities inherent in such songs:

Babamki pēs canr em, osku pēs tetew.  
T’anak’i pēs siptak em, maconi pēs sew.  
Gži pēs xelōk’ em, xonarhi pēs xew.  
Č’unay or xelk’ č’unem, Kasen ahlēkean.

(I am as heavy as cotton, as light as gold.  
I am as white as ink, as black as yogurt.  
I am as reasonable as a madman, as excited as someone meek.  
Since I have no brain, they call [me] knowing.)

---

31 I have not encountered Turkish aşiks’ songs on this topic from the early modern period  
32 “Qaldı”, Qurbani, in Kazimov, 1990, p. 112.  
33 “Yetirməsin”, Qurbani, in Kazimov, 1990, p. 49.  
M. Petition

The only petition song is Sayat’-Nova’s *Dun ēn glxēn imastun is* (You are profoundly wise), his plea to King Erekle II.

N. For relative(s)

The only song for a close relative is Qurbani’s song on his mother.35

Sub-group for Ottoman Aşıks include:

The *Alkışlama* (panegyric of individuals) hardly exists outside the praise of valiant warriors, which can be merged with the category of heroism (yığitleme) or song of courage and war, which is only popular among Turkish military aşıks and lacked any counterpart in the Iranian sphere.36 Such songs either praise a single exemplary soldier or officer’s bravery, or promote morale, which almost universally requires recalling the courage and heroic deeds of the soldiers themselves or their predecessors in earlier battles, in which the Ottomans appear as the constant victor.

Armenian Subgenres:

A. The confession of sin or declaration of faith from a Christian perspective, e.g. Şamê’i Melk’ô’s *Hawatovs hawatam* “I believe in my faith,”37 which references the famous prayer with a similar title by the twelfth-century catholicos poet Nersês Şnorhali.38

---

36 The only exception from this period is a song by Qurbani in praise of Nuru Bey’s bravery: “İndi”, p. 127. Artun, pp. 190-193. In the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, there are Armenian aşıf songs composed in either Turkish or Armenian language in praise of the defense in Zeyt’un in 1862, or other occasions. See Xa’îk Amirean, *T’urk’alezu Hay aşufner,* (Osmanya kaysru’t’iwn, 16-20rd dater), J. Kasbarian, Aulnay-sous-Bois, Paris, 1989, pp. 90-110.
B. A mother’s instructing her daughter about how to be a good wife and daughter-in-law in her husband’s family. Examples include Yart’un Ölli’s *Erg matanoy* “Song of the ring.”39 This motif originated from a matrix in Armenian folklore.

C. Under the rubric of contemporary events a number of early modern Armenian ašuls compose laments on the destruction of cities or regions as the result of military campaigns. These embrace the sack of New Julfa by the Afghans and Nader Shah after the fall of the Safavids,40 or Agha Mohammad Shah’s invasion of Georgia and attack on Tiflis in 1795 to assert the strong central rule of the new Qajar dynasty in Iran.41 Granted that Caucasia lies on a seismic fault, the theme also depicts earthquakes such as that which struck Yerevan in 167942 or Constantinople in 1778.43

D. The dispute between two animals or two natural or artificial items always focuses on which is more powerful or useful. For example, both master Łul Yovhannēs and his disciple Yart’un Ölli have debate songs between between heaven and earth, or the soul and body.44 Two such Armenian songs are also attributed to Sayat’-Nova, one a dialogue between a shepherd and a wolf, the other a contention between sour soup and mutton. However, since neither is included in the two manuscripts,45 as mentioned in Chapter 2, their authenticity cannot be ascertained. This theme derives from rhetorical

---

39 Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 262-263.
41 Šamč’i Melk’ō: Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 296-300.
44 All included in Sahakyan, 1961. For Łul Yovhannēs’ debate between heaven and earth, see pp. 186-188, and, for his debate between soul and body, see pp. 183-185. For Yart’un Ölli’s debate between heaven and earth, see pp. 253-256, and, for his debate between soul and body, see pp. 251-252.
45 Armenian songs, appendix B, No. 7 and No. 8 (62 and 63 by accumulation), in Baxč`inyan, 1988, pp. 70-72.
training at Armenian institutions of higher learning, which employed Hellenistic manuals like Aphthonius and Theon of Alexandria. Ultimately, the theme can be traced back to scribal practice in the Ancient Near East.

Comparison with the fuller list of themes drawn up by Artun suggests that certain categories had not yet been developed in this period or only gained popularity subsequently.\textsuperscript{46} For example, the salavatlama employed before a wrestling contest or other public performance and ağıt (dirge) are totally absent. Nor are the Kargışlama and taşlama (or takılma), i.e. songs of criticism, the former against an individual, the latter also treating social issues, fate, etc., numerous either.

Section 4 Distinctive Features of sixteenth to eighteenth centuries Armeno-Turkish ašuf literature

Armeno-Turkish literature, the corpus of Turkish works composed by Armenians in the Armenian script, comprises materials intended primarily for a Turkish-speaking Armenian community (e.g. Turkish translations of the Bible and religious literature) as well as texts recorded with the intent of reaching a wider audience by oral dissemination.\textsuperscript{47} Naturally, this classification includes works of Armeno-Turkish literature.\textsuperscript{47}

\textsuperscript{46} There seems to be an overlap in Artun’s categorization as well. For example, his category of yearning (özlem) includes yearning for the bard’s love, already listed in the previous category of love (aşk) (Artun, 2011, pp. 164-165). Similarly, the category of admonition (öğütleme) is hardly distinguishable from religious teaching in the Early Modern period, and better represented by Levonyan’s title of “moral-religious admonitions” (Artun, 2011, pp. 183-190). Artun also attempts at further differentiating some categories like satire and admonition, but his subdivisions do not fit the Early Modern period well. Thus extant sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries bardic satirical songs, for example, seem rather random and are merely directed against individuals.

\textsuperscript{47} On the general situation of Armeno-Turkish literature, see Hasmik Step`anyan, 
așuğs\textsuperscript{48}. Indeed, manuscript folios containing Armeno-Turkish așuğ songs in different collections number in the hundreds,\textsuperscript{49} but unfortunately those codices have not been investigated in proportion to their volume.\textsuperscript{50} In contrast, a large percentage of the published Armeno-Turkish așuğ songs were composed in the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, after the period under examination. The present study is purely based on published materials, consisting firstly of Sayat’-Nova’s 116 Azeri songs (edited and published in Baxč`inyan’s collection) together with other research literature by various scholars, 9 of Yart’un Öhli’s 95 Armeno-Azeri songs (edited and published by Minasean), Nahapet K`uč`ak’s 7 Turkish songs (edited and published by Önnik Ėganyan), and other Armenian așuğs’ works, scattered in a number of Armenian, Turkish, or Azeri publications.

Generally speaking, Armeno-Turkish așuğs were well integrated into the norms of the genre, composing in the local Turkic vernacular, employing the mainstream prosodies and tropes, and reciting the traditional love stories.\textsuperscript{51} Consequently, there are only a few songs explicitly dealing with Christian themes or shrines, while within the repertoire as a whole, the chief distinguishing factor is Armeno-Turkish așuğs’ penchant for love songs in the secular vein devoted to a female beloved rather than theoerotic.

\textsuperscript{48} These should be distinguished from Armenian așuğ songs in Turkish that were transmitted in Ottoman Turkish records in the Arabic script, which will be briefly discussed in Chapter 5. Note also that some of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs were written in the Georgian script in his Davt’ar.

\textsuperscript{49} For a brief account of Armeno-Turkish așuğ literature and its collections in libraries, see Step`anyan, 2001, pp. 36-42.

\textsuperscript{50} So far the most comprehensive publication of these songs is Amirean, 1989. There is another collection of Armenian așuğs’ works preserved in Alevi-Bektashi literature, for which, see Mehmet Bayrak, \textit{Alevi-Bektaşı edebiyatında Ermeni âşıkları (aşuğlar)}, Öz-Ge Yayınları, Ankara, 2005.

\textsuperscript{51} Similarly, in questions of onomasticon, only a very few receive Armenian professional names.
Granted the small number of Armeno-Turkish aşuƗ songs under examination, it appears that the frequency of different genres or themes in this corpus is consistent with the general conclusions for bardic compositions in this period, i.e., koshma and semai prosodies prevail, while divan, (dubeyt), mukhammas, and tejinis also occur. With regard to themes, love and moral-religious admonishment/allegories predominate, while lament on personal fate and migrant (panduxt) themes also appear. Similarly, literary devices similarly tend to be rather plain, while rhetorical devices are mainly conventional in keeping with the aşuƗ genre as a whole.

Section 5 Some General Features of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs

It has been argued that Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs are the least studied component of his trilingual corpus, though that corpus represents the largest output of Armeno-Turkish songs by any early modern Armenian aşuƗ, amounting to more than the sum of his Armenian and Georgian songs combined, as well as surpassing the output of many Turkic aşiks/aşıqs. Armenian scholars place most attention on his Armenian songs, which are truly his most accomplished and innovative works artistically, as will be discussed in Chapter 4. While Turkish and Azerbaijani scholars have contributed very little to Sayat’-Nova studies in general, they

---

52 Dowsett, 1997, p. 422. There is a section on Sayat’-Nova’s multilingual composition in Baxçınyan, 1988, pp. 133-146. For his coverage of the general features of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs, see pp. 137-138) and, for the Georgian songs, pp. 138-141.

53 For this point, the brief treatment by scholars like Baxçınyan and Dowsett, and the absence of Sayat’-Nova from monographs on the history of Azeri literature might be used as side proofs.

54 Dowsett, 1997, p. 422.
too devote more effort to his Armenian works than those in Azeri.\textsuperscript{55} Similarly, in his voluminous study of Sayat’-Nova Dowsett dedicated only about a dozen pages to his Azeri poems, much of which deal with purely textual issues.\textsuperscript{56} Here I will first compare the features of Sayat’-Nova’s Armeno-Azeri songs with those discussed in the first two sections, progressing from secondary issues to the four important aspects listed in section 1, i.e. language, form, theme, and literary devices. In the next section I will treat some his individual songs, concerning which I have more particular questions to raise.

One of Sayat’-Nova’s distinctive traits is being the only Armenian ašuƗ whose Azeri works are written in both the Armenian and Georgi\textsuperscript{an} scripts.\textsuperscript{57} The only davt`ar directly available to me is that of the Isfahani Armenian ašuƗ Yart’un Īlli, which is written in the Armenian alphabet. Publications are unhelpful with regard to the original form, as Armenian editions of Armeno-Turkish songs utilize the Armenian script, while those published by Turks and Azerbaijanis employ the Turkish/Azeri script. Sayat’-Nova’s Daftar proves the poet’s familiarity with the Georgian script. However, the reason for his choice of it to render Azeri is a matter of dispute. Scholars from Axverdean on have argued that Sayat’-Nova was more trained in the Georgian script than the Armenian,\textsuperscript{58} yet, since he used both to record his Azeri songs, that reasoning does not accord with the facts.

Linguistically, Baxč`inyan is the only scholar who tries to define Sayat’-Nova’s

\textsuperscript{55} Seyidov, 1954, pp.69-155 is dedicated to the study of Sayat’-Nova’s songs, yet more examples are drawn from his Armenian songs than his Azeri compositions.

\textsuperscript{56} Dowsett, 1997, pp. 422-434.

\textsuperscript{57} In contrast, Šamč`i Melk’ō has only one Azeri song transmitted to us, which was inaccessible to me.

\textsuperscript{58} As quoted from Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 47.
idiolect, stating that he composed in the Ayrum Turkic vernacular, but without supplying references.\(^{59}\)

Sayat`-Nova himself added notes on the genres of most of the songs in his Davt`ar, both Azeri and Armenian. The titles he cites are much more numerous than any other bard of the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries, even if we consider purely simple titles and ignore their composite counterparts. For example, categories according to prosody include divani, t`aslib, t`ejnis, varsaf, barit`avur, İap`ia, dubeyt` (Levonyan’s dyubeyt’), Ġazali (Levonyan’s Ɨazel), and muxammames. Meanwhile, those according to content comprise ilahi, edaglama, ogut`lama, and sujut`lama (vujut`lama). Similarly, those classified by rhetorical figures include uč`lama, aval-axër, dodaƗdegmaz, Ɨaraheǰa, and zinǰirlama (or spelt as zanjirlama), among others. As is common in bardic practice, Sayat`-Nova names genres by their prosody, theme, and rhetorical devices at the same time. However, a careful observation of all the genres he used indicates that in this respect he is the most skillful master of all early modern Armenian aşuƗs, and one of the most accomplished bards generally in that period. The major characteristics of his prosody are as follows:

A. Sayat`-Nova’s favorite prosody is muxammas, which he used in 26 out of the 66 Armenian songs of his known at that time. He also used prosodies like dyubeyt’, İošma, Ɨazel, divani, ţubayi, varsali, teǰnis, etc. However, prosodies like myustezed, İalandari, semai, Ɨarki, dest’an, etc. which are favored by Turkish Armenian aşuƗs are absent from his work.

B. Sayat`-Nova introduced more diversity than other Armenian aşuƗs in the prosodies

\(^{59}\) Ibid. The Ayrums or Ayirms are a group of ethnic Azeris. There are several towns named after them, fully or partly, in the trilateral border intersection of Armenia, Georgia, and Azerbaijan, so that the Ayrum vernacular should be the Turkic speech of that area.
he used, creating some which are unique to his works.

C. Sayat’-Nova created new composite prosodies based on the reorganization of existing structures.

D. Sayat’-Nova frequently appealed to poetic license to introduce foreign words for their melodiousness.

E. In some songs Sayat’-Nova consecutively used masculine and feminine rhymes, which is unique among Armenian aşuƗs until the mid-twentieth century.60

The five conclusions above were first observed in Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs, but they also hold good for his compositions in Armeno-Turkish, though not as firm as in the Armenian sphere. For example, his Azeri muxammazes amount to 5, around 4% of the total. However, if we take into consideration the fact that apart from the Tiflis Armenian aşuƗs, the muxammaz is rarely found among sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries bards in general, its small representation in Sayat’-Nova’s output fits the broader norm.

In addition to writing the largest number of Armeno-Turkish songs of any Armenian aşuƗ in the early modern period, Sayat’-Nova also produces the most diversity of forms and prosodies. Indeed, his utilization of so many technically complex forms renders him almost unique among sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries bards. He employed genres like t`eǰnis (passim), aval-axěr (Azeri Nos. 36, 51, 72, 113), alip`lama (Azeri Nos. 26, 108), zinǰirlama (Azeri Nos. 32, 35, 68, 73) etc., in which certain

---

60 For further details, see “Sayat’-Novayi xaƗeri tafač ap’u yan mi k`ani aranjahatkut’yunneri masin”, first published in Sovetakan grakanut’yun, 1941, No. 2 and later included in Levonyan, 1944, pp. 87-98. To these five cxharacteristics Levonyan added the observation that Sayat Nova made great efforts to conform as much as classical Persian poets’ stress rules as possible in his Armenian songs. However, the bard’s prosodies are syllabic, not quantitative as Persian ʿarūḍ prosody. In addition, Levonyan did not examples in support of his conclusions.
rhetorical figures are constitutive of the genre. A case in point is the larahaǰa, which requires the bard to spell a word in each line or stanza. The names of the last letters of the spelt words bear the rhyme, and the full meaning of the whole piece depends on putting each spelt word in the place it is spelt.  

It thus emerges as a complex word game.

Besides, he also created complex composite forms by using more than one rhetorical figure in one song. These composite forms he referred to by a combination of genre terms, e.g. dodałdeymaz-zanjırlama (Azeri No. 62), dodałdeymaz-t`ejnis (Azeri Nos. 63 and 70), alip`lama-larahaǰa (Azeri No. 108). He even has one song combining more than one prosody with one of the rhetorical figures, e.g. muxammaz-bayat`i-dodaldeymaz (Azeri No. 81). Dowsett devotes two consecutive chapters to Sayat`-Nova’s versification techniques: rhyme, meter, and versification, his accomplishments in literary devices and word games, and allegory, pun, and riddle.

The difficulty in understanding songs of this genre is shown by the fact that their transliterations and translations differ so much in Baxč`inyan’s and Dowsett’s works (Baxč`inyan’s No. 93: Baxč`inyan, 1987, pp. 284-287; Dowsett, 1997, pp. 345-346. Baxč`inyan’s No. 108: Baxč`inyan, 1987, pp. 308-311; Dowsett, 1997, pp. 342-344). Below the first stanza of Baxč`inyan’s No. 104 (Baxč`inyan, 1987, pp. 302-305) is given with the necessary explanations and a tentative English translation as an example of the genre. It should be noted that this is the only song in where the formal requirement is observed in every line.

Małrubdan k`im q`axti? K`ap` u ali`, mim, (Arabic letters kāf, ‘alif and mīm comprise Persian kām, “will, desire”.)

Mašruba et`išti jím u alip`, mim, (Arabic letters jīm, ‘alif and mīm comprise Persian jām “cup, goblet”.)

Man da ónun k`imi gap`, alip`, ze u mim. (Arabo-Persian letters gāf, ‘alif, za and mīm comprise Azeri gəzəm “I wander”.)

(Who pulled out desire from the west?
Allow me to write down my words.
Cup arrived at wine,
I also want to wander like that.)

In the course of his general discussion, drawing examples from Sayat’-Nova’s trilingual corpus, he successfully shows Sayat’-Nova’s dexterity in word games and his command of different languages. In the three samples of Sayat’-Nova’s most complex songs, two are Armenian (Nos. 47 and 55\(^{63}\)), and one Azeri (No. 78\(^{64}\)). Dowsett maintains that Sayat’-Nova indulges most in multifarious word-play in his Azeri verse, and further assumes “that he must have been influenced by previous Azeri verse, though it is not easy to point to definite models”\(^{65}\). At the same time, I should add that no other bard of the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries familiar to me can compete with him in this respect. In most cases, t’ejnis is the most technically complex genre employed. Since Sayat’-Nova’s complex genres are rarely found in Ottoman, Azeri, or Persian elevated literatures either, there is a possibility that Sayat’-Nova’s models have been lost, if he ever had any.

Nevertheless, Dowsett remarked that Sayat’-Nova’s t’ejnis is not always consistent with the amount and complexity exhibited in the three examples he cites\(^{66}\). Furthermore, the literary devices in his Azeri songs are less individualized or innovative than his Armenian songs. Indeed, most of his Azeri songs reveal a rather plain plot structure, while the tropes are conventional and can be paralleled in the works of other bards. But since innovation forms a major aspect of his Armenian songs, his Azeri and Armenian songs will be compared in chapter 4 from the perspective of consistency and focus.

\(^{63}\) Hasrat’yán’s 51.
\(^{64}\) Hasrat’yán’s 36.
\(^{65}\) Dowsett, 1997, p. 317.
\(^{66}\) Dowsett, 1997, p. 301.
Now I would like to consider the possible reasons for this variation. In all probability Sayat`-Nova will have been trained in composing/improvising songs in Azeri, more particularly, the Azeri dialect current in eighteenth-century Tiflis. Among his dated songs the earliest is Azeri No. 71 of 1742, about a decade earlier than his earliest dated Armenian song. According to Hasrat`yan, there are some undated songs (e.g. Nos. 49, 51, and 67) which may have been written even earlier, not much after he began his ašuƗ career. Since the form of Oghuz Turkic now called Azeri was widespread in the Caucasus at that time, it is plausible that his Azeri songs would have attracted a more diverse audience than those in Armenian and Georgian. Sayat`-Nova’s imperfect knowledge of the Arabic script is reflected in three of his Azeri songs (Nos. 6, 26, 108). While No. 6 is a divani, the other two are Alip`lamas, and hence all three are abecedarian songs. According to convention, in these he therefore opened each line consecutively with a new letter of the abjad alphabet. However, in each of them Sayat`-Nova reveals a number of spelling errors. All these factors serve to explain both why most of his songs are written in Azeri as well as their artistic conventionality.

---

67 As quoted from Baxč`inyan, 1987, note, pp. 488, 490.
68 Dowsett, 1997, pp. 84, 173.
69 For example, in No. 6, he treated sultan’s initial letter as th, which should be s. He starts zalim with z, when this should be zad, and begins zimistan with zad instead of z. Additionally, in No. 5, he spelt kharâb as khârâb (Dowsett, 1997, pp. 336-339). All these lead to the conclusion that he knew the names of the letters in the Arabic script for Azeri, and perhaps their forms as well, but was not familiar with Azeri orthography of in that script. Most probably he was spelling Azeri according to local pronunciation. This would be typical of the approach of non-Muslims who would be unlikely to have received a formal education in the Arabic script in a Muslim educational institution in the eighteenth century. Baxč`inyan’s defense of Sayat`-Nova’s literacy in the Arabic script (Baxč`inyan, 1988, pp. 287-288) is flawed in my opinion. First, his argument based on Azeri Song No. 73 is problematic as the letters involved in the argument (for details, see Hasrat`yan, 1963, pp. 268-269) are not only spelt in different forms, but also pronounced differently. It should not be difficult to know that they are four different letters if one has an oral familiarity with Azeri and only some knowledge of the Arabic alphabet, not necessarily the orthography of specific lexemes.
Meanwhile the formal diversity and frequency of wordplay, represented in those songs may be ascribed to his excellent command of bardic genres as well as the preference of his audience.

Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs treat more than half the primary themes distinguished in early modern bardic literature. Out of the major themes, religious and moral admonishment is found almost as frequently as love, which is rare among sixteenth-to-eighteenth-centuries aşık/aşıqs composing in Azeri. Apart from these topics, others include complaint concerning one’s misfortune (Nos. 41, 66), and wandering (No. 52), among others.

Section 6 On the possible ambience, purpose, and audience of some of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs

A. Sayat’-Nova’s songs composed by improvisation and possibly intended for competition

As stated above, a number of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs may be improvisations and/or set compositions, some of which some may have been designed for bardic competitions, as suggested by some senior scholars. For example, in his 1987 collection, Baxč’inyan asserted that Azeri songs Nos. 102 and 103 were performed at competitions, but without elucidating his reasoning. He also argues that Azeri song No. 38 comes from a similar provenance, judging from the fact that Sayat’-Nova called it meidani in

---

70 Famous Azeri ashuqs like Qurbani and Abbas had love and admonishing themes in a rough ratio of 2:1. Only Valeh has very few love songs.
71 Baxč’inyan, 2003, p. 296.
his own note, which Baxč’inyan interprets as “of the public square” i.e. for bardic competition.\textsuperscript{72} The assertion that many of Sayat’-Nova’s formally complex Azeri songs were composed for competition is also reprised in his 1988 monograph.\textsuperscript{73} In my opinion, apart from Nos. 38, 102 and 103, Azeri Nos. 49, 65, 69, 87 and 88 seem more likely to be improvisations, though the specific argument in each case may be different. For songs 65 and 69, the mentioning of one’s family origin and one’s confession are quite common in Turkic bardic competition.\textsuperscript{74} One of the most striking examples is the bard’s reference to his parents’ origin in the last stanza of Azeri song No. 65:

\begin{verbatim}
Birisin diar, “Sayat’-Nova haradan?”
Birisin “Hind” diar, biri “Hamadan”,
Vat’anum T’ip’l[il]zdur, samt’-i Gurǰistan,\textsuperscript{75}
Anam Havlabarlu, at’am Halablu.\textsuperscript{76}
\end{verbatim}

(One says, “Where is Sayat’-Nova from?”
One says, “India”, another “Hamadan”,
My native place is Tiflis, in the direction of Georgia,
My mother is from Havlabar,\textsuperscript{77} my father from Aleppo.)

Similarly, in the last stanza of Azeri song No. 69, he quite proudly declares himself to be a Christian Armenian:

\begin{verbatim}
Gun doƗanda Ɨiblagahi,
K’ej baxanlar ė’ak’sun vahī,
\end{verbatim}

\textsuperscript{72} Baxč’inyan, 1987, lyric text: pp. 190-191; editor’s endnote: p. 486. Yet no further argument for this usage is given here either.
\textsuperscript{73} Baxč’inyan, 1988, pp. 137, 246-247.
\textsuperscript{74} Artun, 2011, p. 113.
\textsuperscript{75} Here the phrase “samt’-i Gurǰistan” is Persian, containing a Persian \textit{ezafe} structure.
\textsuperscript{76} Baxč’inyan, 1987, pp. 236-237.
\textsuperscript{77} Armenian Havlabar (Georgian Avlabari) is the name of the major Armenian residential area in Tiflis/Tbilisi.
Sayat’-Nova dini sa[h]i, Ink’ar ēt’maz Ėrmanidur.\textsuperscript{78}

(When the sun is born in the direction of prayer (Ɨibla)
May awry observers experience pain.
Sayat’-Nova’s religion is correct.
He is an Armenian who does not make mistakes.)

For songs 87 and 88, Sayat’-Nova himself acknowledged that both were for a feast (meǰles) and to the same tune on the same date in his note to the latter.\textsuperscript{79} Although it was possible that these songs were pre-composed, this seems less plausible. For other songs, I would argue that if they lack a consistent meaning, but are characterized by the complexity and significance of its rhetoric figures, they are much more likely to be an improvisation or set composition, performed for competition. An example is Azeri song No. 49, which is a yarana built on the word xal “mole”, as according to Sayat’-Nova’s own naming it is a “xali vra yarana”.\textsuperscript{80} Apart from the first, each line starts with a different declension of the phrase bir xal (a mole). The whole song is structured around the description of the belle’s mole without further semantic development. There is no reference to the time of its composition. According to Hasrat’yan, this song was composed when Sayat’-Nova was only a novice.\textsuperscript{81} However, no matter how feasible this hypothesis may sound, another assumption can be made, that the theme “mole” was required for Sayat’-Nova to improvise a song on. In consequence, the bard’s quick wit

\textsuperscript{78} Baxč’inyan, 1987, pp. 240-241.
\textsuperscript{79} Baxč’inyan, 1987, pp. 274-279. Indeed No. 89 is in the same tune (as Sayat’-Nova himself mentioned) and the same style, therefore one might argue that it was also composed for a feast, though this is not corroborated by the note.
\textsuperscript{80} Baxč’inyan, 1987, pp. 210-211.
\textsuperscript{81} As quoted from Baxč’inyan, 1987, p. 488.
was more appreciated rather than a meaningful or beautiful message. In my opinion, these four songs are the most likely candidates for improvisation among Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri compositions. However, apart from them, the argument can be made for others also being improvisation(s) and/or set composition(s) for performance at competitions based on similar reasoning. This applies, for example, to Azeri songs Nos. 20, 51, 55 and 70, which all share a complex form. No. 20 is a t’ejnisi-şahmohrla, i.e., t’ejnis in the manner of şahmohr, which requires a certain word to be repeated several times in every line. In this song, the word repeated three times in each line, is xas, with a wide semantic range in Azeri, including “special, private, one’s own, select, noble” as in Persian. and “(bread) well baked, baked brown” in Azeri, also forms the jinās, which makes the song well-nigh untranslatable. No. 51 is an aval-axër. No. 55 is a şahmohrlu-yarana, i.e. in yarana prosody with the rhetoric figure of şahmohr. But here the şahmohr is far easier than in No. 20, since the word gordum “I saw” is not found in the first two lines, appearing at the beginning of the remaining 18 lines (with the fifteenth line lost), but not repeated in many of them. All these irregularities make it sound closer to alliteration than şahmohr. No. 70 is called a dodaldedmaz-t’ejnis, but actually combines a şahmohr on the word t’ar, repeated three times in each line. In its fifth and final stanza Sayat’-Nova even focused the jinās on his professional name.

All these techniques

---

82 Persian, “king’s seal”, “precious stone said to be found in a serpent’s mouth or a dragon’s head”. Dowsett quoted from Steingass, p. 308. Dowsett assumes this word for repetition as the “jewel”, and discusses the complexity of this song on the same page.

83 That should be spelled khaṣṣ in the Arabic script.

84 This stanza reads:

T’ar yarun darina, t’ar Sayat’-Nova,
T’ar ov t’ar ovla t’ar sayat’ nova, (According to the interpreter, here the phrase sayat’ nova shall be understood as say at’un ova.)
render it another of Sayat’-Nova’s most complicated songs. Apart from their figural complexity these songs possess less inner semantic connection among the stanzas, suggesting that they were composed for formal rather than semantic appreciation. In turn, the crux of their formal complexity might be propounded as a requirement imposed on the bard rather than his own predilection. Unfortunately, there is not much clue about the ethnicity or identity of Sayat’-Nova’s competitors or the audience for whom he composed these songs. Still it can be conjectured that frequently bards would come to Tiflis from other cities to participate in a contest. Due to the status of Oghuz Turkic as the fundamental performing language of the bardic tradition and the likelihood that most of those bards would have been Turkic, it seems natural that so many of Sayat’-Nova songs plausibly composed for contests were written in Azeri. A case in point, Azeri Song No. 69 was even more probably composed against a Turkic Muslim bard, judging from Sayat’-Nova’s proud reference to his distinctive faith and ethnos as a Christian Armenian. Similarly, if a song was performed in a public square, it is more likely the audience was general and involved a mixture of all the ethnicities present in Tiflis.

T’ar derya uzinda t’ar say at’ nova.
T’ar sayat’ t’ar t’ak’i t’ar uzal uzal.

(Just for the beloved’s door [or ‘happiness’ as in the Armenian translation?], Sayat’-Nova, Simply go hunting, throw stone to the field [or ‘on the flat field’ as in the Armenian translation?]. Or as on the surface of the sea, count the number of ships [or ‘make effort again’ as in the Armenian translation?].
Like a hunter, until afar, afar [or ‘Like fishermen, we swim, swim!’ as in the Armenian translation?].)

Baxçınyan, 1987, pp. 244-245. Much of the interpretation of the homonymies is based on the Armenian translation, but with my own interpretation, as the translation of the parallel Armenian translation is given side by side above.

154
B. Possible audience of some songs

It is accepted that Sayat’-Nova served for many years at the court of the Georgian king Erekle II, but many indications in his Dav’tar lead us to infer that not all his songs were composed for that milieu. Georgian is obviously the language of the court of Kartli and Kakheti, therefore it should be safe to assume that out of Sayat’-Nova’s trilingual corpus his Georgian songs were most likely composed for court performance. The situation is less clear for his Azeri and Armenian compositions. Some of his works, like Azeri songs Nos. 9 and 11, are composed in Armenian and Azeri consecutively. However, Sayat’-Nova’s most famous macaronic song is composed in four languages, expressing a bitter regret and a greatly troubled mind, on March 6, 1758, one year before his dismissal from the Georgian court. Dowsett afforded a discussion of this idiosyncratic song, which focuses on its background rather than its artistic merits. According to Dowsett, the composition reflects a nervous breakdown perhaps related to his precarious status in court, which may ultimately have led to his dismissal.85

Let us now consider the last stanza of Azeri song No. 96:

Var idi Nadir-Šah, xalip’a Łazar,
Ô vaxt melik’ idi Aia Miniškar,
Hani ēyla divan? Hani ēyla šar?
K`ovul, yoxdur, Sayat’-Nova neylasun?

(There were Nader Shah, Caliph86 Łazar,
At that time the melik` was Miskin Agha,
Where is law? Where is order?)

85 All the quotations and paraphrases relating to this song are based on Dowsett, 1997, pp. 193-199, with his English translation.
86 Note here that Sayat’-Nova used the term caliph for the catholicos, supreme patriarch of the Armenian Apostolic Church.
Oh heart, there is none. Sayat’-Nova, what are you doing?)

Here the bard mentions Nader Shah, the overlord of Iran (r. 1736-1747), the Armenian Catholicos Łazar ḹahkec’i (r. 1737-1751), and the Armenian mayor of Tiflis Miskin Agha, or Agha Ašxarbekean Behbut’eanc’ (1734-1768 in office, intermittently from 1746-1760), who received the title Miniškarbaši “Hunting Master” from Nader Shah. From the past tenses used to describe them it seems this song was written between 1751 and 1760, when none of the three were in their posts. The dating mechanism listing the suzerain, Armenian catholicos and local official representing the Armenian community indicates a well-established practice among Armenian scribes in producing the colophon to a manuscript being copied. As a result, the song in question was probably directed to an Armenian audience.

C. Bilingualism or multilingualism in Sayat’-Nova’s audience and their possible identity as reflected in some songs

Sayat’-Nova’s multilingualism is easily perceptible from his corpus, but what of his possible audience? As mentioned above, the very existence of Azeri-Armenian macaronic songs proves the bilingualism of certain Tiflis Armenians and suggests that Tiflis Armenian ašuşs could perform in both these languages at that period. Similarly, the relative frequency of Persian phrases in Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs as, for example, samt’-i Gurfistan in Azeri No. 59 indicates the familiarity of the city’s aristocracy and

---

merchant community with the language. Thus, apart from the four-language macaronic song, Sayat`-Nova inserts short Persian sentences in three of his Azeri songs. There is only one very short sentence in the second line, first stanza of his Azeri song No. 58 č`i mixast “What did she want?”, which is used to form a jinās with the Azeri phrase č`imixast (Chinese satin\[88]). While in Azeri No. 38 there is one hemistich in each of the first four stanzas written in Persian; and in Azeri No. 104, each first hemistich in the first three lines in the fourth stanza is Persian.

Another fact is that though Sayat`-Nova had translated at least one song from Turkish into Georgian,\[89] no bilingual Georgian-Azeri macaronic song exists. This might imply the relative lack of familiarity with Azeri on the part of the Georgian population. Tiflis Armenians, as reflected from the example of Sayat`-Nova himself, were largely fluent in Georgian.

D. Songs with explicit Christian reference

A number of Sayat`-Nova’s Azeri songs, macaronic or not, contain Christian allusions and connotations (e.g. Nos. 5, 11, 59, 62, 84). As quoted above, No. 11 relates to the martyrdom of St. John the Precursor (Surb Karapet in Armenian). Similarly, the Nativity and Holy Sepulcher are mentioned in No. 5,\[90] while Adam, Abraham (Ibrahim, Khalil as his title “Friend of Allah” in Islam) and Mary appear in No. 59, and No. 62 refers to Genesis and the sin of Adam and Eve, the protoplasts’ expulsion from Eden,

---

88 According to Baxč`inyan’s comment, this is rather a corrupted form of the correct phrase č`ini xas (Baxč`inyan, 1987, pp. 224-225).
89 This translation is not included in the main part of Baxč`inyan’s 1987 book, but at the end of notes to Sayat`-Nova’s Georgian songs, since its Azeri original is lost. See Baxč`inyan, 1987, pp. 478-479.
90 It is noteworthy that, though this song belongs to the xat`ayi genre, Shah Ismail Khaṭā`i is not the figure venerated here.
and Abraham’s fast. One might argue that these latter songs might be appropriate for Muslims as well, since all the figures mentioned are venerated as prophets in Islam, too.

However, the case of No. 84 is very different, since in the last two lines of its fourth stanza, the bard claims:

Har k`im, k`i Isani al[1]ah soyl[a]maz,
Dili tu`tulsun, ut`anmaz, na iĉ`un?\(^91\)

(Whoever does not say, ‘Jesus is God’,
Even if his tongue gets tied, he would not repent. Why?)

In his note to the song Sayat`-Nova explicitly states that it is a varsal composed for Christians to know God.\(^92\) I have not encountered another Armenian ašuƗ composing Turkish songs with such explicit Christian expressions. But it is not rare to observe Armenians composing works in Turkish for religious purposes, as we have seen from PaƗtasar Dpir’s works, either in pure Turkish or Armenian-Turkish macaronic forms.\(^93\) As for the possible occasions on which these songs were performed, while arguing No. 84 belongs in a purely Christian setting, the others might be acceptable in a mixed Christian-Muslim milieu. However, No. 11 might be more suitable in an Armenian Christian setting, since the saint is more venerated among Armenians than Georgians and far less than Muslims in general.

E. Songs with Islamic contents

\(^92\) Ibid.
\(^93\) Such songs are numorous in Šušanik Nazaryan, PaƗtasar Dpir: TaƗıkner, Sovetakan Grof Hratarakč` ut`yun, Yerevan, 1958. For macaronic examples, see canto XLIX, pp. 152-153 and, for pure Armeno-Turkish, see canto LX, pp. 169-170.
There are a fair number of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs, which contain a variety of Muslim themes, including the mystic love of Sufi literature. It should be emphasized, however, that though Sayat’-Nova used genres of Islamic origin and in some songs employs phrases more proper to Muslims than Christians, Islamic notions still occupy a small place few in his oeuvre.

Azeri songs No. 1-5, 7-10 and 37 encompass two genres that, judging by their name or contents, were originally associated with distinct Shiite or Sufi connotations. No. 1-5 are šahxat`ayi or simply xat`ayi, a specific kind of divan/divani originally dedicated to Shah Ismail I (Khaṭā’ī) by Iranian Shiites. Universally, such songs begin with the formula “It is said that Shah Khaṭā’ī” (in Azeri: “Dødilər ki Şah Xətəi”), in praise of him, and more frequently than not the song is dedicated to Shiite belief as well.94 Similarly, Nos. 7-10 and 37 form a special kind of lazali: Ilahi “of God”, the title of the genre indicating its (originally) religious content, including divine love. As mentioned above in discussing the general features of Early Modern Armenian ašuł composition, the love songs in that corpus are predominantly secular and devoted to a female beloved. This applies to most of Sayat’-Nova’s xat’ayis and ilahis also. Only two xat’ayis (Azeri songs Nos. 1-2) and one ilahi (Azeri song No. 37) diverge from this pattern. The ilahi talks about ašulluł i.e. his identity as an ašul, rather in the original sense of “lover”, which can be explained in either a secular or mystic sense. However, the two xat’ayis are not about love or the beloved, but rather the ustad “master” or p’ir “sage”.

Among the other songs with an explicit Islamic reference is Azeri song No.91. In the fourth stanza Sayat’-Nova admonishes:

Ładi mip’liz, č’un k’i idi Ɨaradan,
Łahar āt’di er u gogi Ɨaradan,
Bu uč’ nasta yazilup’tur Ɨaradan,
Birin K’it’ab, birin Łuran, birin İnjil.

(The body is incapable, since it was from earth,
[The Lord] created earth and heaven from darkness,
These three works were written by the Almighty,95
One [is] the Book, one the Qur’an, one the Gospel.)

This song relates to the three “peoples of the book”, the inǰil and İuran referring to the Muslim and Christian scriptures, while k’it’ab (literally the book) should be interpreted as the taurāt, the Jewish Torah. As a result, it is likely that the song was composed for a Muslim audience.

The Qur’an is mentioned on two other occasions in Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri corpus. In Azeri song No. 27, the Qur’an and Abraham are referenced in different stanzas. The Qur’an is represented as one of the three havens of a dervish: woolen cloak, the Qur’an and the stick (wood), while Abraham appears in an allusion as one who observed the way of God. The song’s main focus is not very clear and its stanzas do not seem very cohesive, and different interpretations exist. However, the vagueness of this world, the dervish or friar, the master (p’ir-usta), and identity as an ašül (ašullul) all appear in this

95 It should be mentioned that the “earth” in the first line, “darkness” in the second line, and “All-mighty” in the third line are all the same word Ɨara= Az. qara in the original, which is the pun in this stanza as required by the t’еjnис genre.
song, affording it a strong Sufi flavor. Azeri song No. 101 is another example of songs lamenting the ephemerality of the world. Of the 20 lines of its 5 stanzas, 17 are questions, starting with the word *hani* “where?”. Sayat’-Nova referred to more than 17 allusions to lament on, in which religious, literary, and historical figures like č`angli-pir (another title for S. Karapet⁹⁶), Rustam, Shirin, Farhad⁹⁷, and Nader Shah all appear. But the most striking feature is the juxtaposition of St. John the Precursor with the Prophet Muhammad (Rasul), the Twelve Imams, and the Qur’an, since the last three are all definitely Islamic, with the Twelve Imams apparently of Twelver Shiites.

Senior scholars like Hasrat`yan and Paruyr Sevak have already addressed such songs. Baxč`inyan maintains that though there similarities exist between Sayat’-Nova’s world view and Sufism and certain Sufi expressions in his songs, his claim in other songs to be a Christian Armenian suggests that such Azeri songs should be regarded as the continuation of the ašuł tradition, which was associated with Sufism.⁹⁸ Earlier in the same monograph, Baxč`inyan quotes the Russian scholar Gordlievsky to the effect that Turkish-speaking Armenian ašułs circling in Asia Minor possessed songs composed for both Christian and Muslim audiences in their repertoire.⁹⁹ Against that background, it would be reasonable for Sayat’-Nova to create songs with distinct Islamic connotations for a Muslim or mixed audience. However, in his Georgian song against the current Georgian Catholicos-Patriarch Antoni I, Sayat’-Nova referred to

---

⁹⁶ See the note to Azeri song No. 11 in Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 482.
⁹⁷ These three are literary figures first popularized through the Shahnameh.
⁹⁸ Baxč`inyan, 1988, p. 337.
⁹⁹ Baxč`inyan, 1988, p. 106.
himself as a *sop‘i*, i.e. Sufi. Various explanations have been adduced for his usage of this term. Baxč‘inyan estimates that perhaps Antoni accused the bard of being involved with Sufism. However, as commented above, though Sayat‘-Nova employed genres of Islamic origin, and in some songs phrases proper for Muslims rather than Christians, overall the number of Islamic references in his work are very few. Only three of his Azeri songs treat more explicitly Islamic issues, while five refer to Christian subjects. Thus, In Azeri Song No. 5, one of his Azeri xat`ayis, Sayat‘-Nova talks about Jerusalem and the Holy Sepulcher:

Łut`su šarip` nuri mazar, k`an u mak`andur bězum,  
Uč` k`ilisa, t`axti imam, aziz simal bězumdur.  

In Jerusalem the Sepulcher of honorable light is our life-and-death, Valaršapat, See of the Catholicos, the precious image is ours.)

It is very noteworthy here, that in the Azeri original, Sayat‘-Nova uses Arabic and Turkic terms to expressions Christian notions. Thus Jerusalem is referred to by its Arabic name, while the city of Valaršapat, where the Armenian catholicosal residence of Ejmiacin is located, is denoted by its Turkish name Uč` k`ilisa (lit. “Three churches”). Most strikingly, as the poet had referred to the Armenian catholicos as “caliph” (xalip`a) in Azeri Song No. 96, discussed under the second topic in this section, so here he

---

100 Baxč‘inyan, 1988, pp. 116-117.  
101 An example is Dowsett, 1997, pp. 144, 146.  
102 Baxč‘inyan, 1988, p. 337.  
103 Azeri Song No. 5, lines 9-10. The English translation heavily depends on the parallel Armenian translation.  
104 It is noteworthy that in the Azeri original Sayat‘-Nova used Muslim terminology for the corresponding Christian forms. In Azeri Song No. 96, discussed under the second topic this section, Sayat‘-Nova used the term “caliph” (xalip`a) for the Armenian Catholicos, whereas here the term “Imam”, is found.
utilizes the term “Imam” appropriate in an Azerbaijani Shiite context. On this basis, it is perhaps plausible to propose that the references to p’ir and ustad in Sayat’-Nova’s xat’ayis broached above actually refer to Christian hierarchs.

Sayat’-Nova has one xat’ayi in Armenian as well, which is also about love. However, according to Dowsett’s account, the bard’s own note on this song begins with the Georgian phrase “(By) Ch(rist’s divinity), this divani is very good;”105 while in the 1987 Armenian version of his collected works, the first half, both the letter k` and an interpretation regarding the letter are absent.106 If the absence in Soviet publications is due to political pressure, and Dowsett’s interpretation is reliable, it would mean that Sayat’-Nova did not view Shah Ismail Khaṭā’ī with the regard the latter’s extreme Muslim followers had shown. The titles he gave to Khaṭā’ī like “god” (hał),107 “creator of the world” (ēli-alam yaradan)108 etc. thus illustrate rather maintenance of aşık convention109. At the same time, it is striking that Sayat’-Nova opened his Davt’ar, including both the Armenian and Azeri sections, with the genre of xat’ayi. This might suggest that at most he treated the originator of the genre as a patron saint for his art like St. John the Precursor in beginning with songs dedicated to Khaṭā’ī, as M. Naryan has concluded.110 In contrast to Naryan, Mirali Seyidov gave a correct explanation to

106 Baxč` inyan, 1987, p. 15; also absent from the editors’ endnote, pp. 445-446.
109 Dowsett went so far as to interpret most of Sayat’-Nova’s xat’ayis as songs about secular love, which might not be fully correct if we take into consideration the next issue, that Sayat’-Nova started his Davt’ar with xat’ayi songs. See: Dowsett, 1997, p. 270.
the term “Šaxat’ayi” at length, but interpreted him as the supreme god in Sayat’-Nova’s songs.\footnote{Mirəli Seyidov, \textit{Azərbaycan-Ərməni ədəbi əlaqələri (Orta əsrər)}, Elm Nəşriyyatı, Baku, 1976, pp. 163-172.} It is noticeable the genre xat’ayi is absent from other early modern Armenian aşıqs’ works whether in Armenian or Turkic languages as well as from the works of many Azerbaijani aşıqs.

In conclusion, Sayat’-Nova was a pious Christian, but he was not averse to cultivating aspects of the ashik tradition more than other Armenian aşıls, both in the genre and content of songs with Islamic associations. In doing so, it always appears that he treated Muslims’ belief in a serious, respectful way. This approach should be regarded as proof of his broad-mindedness in matters of religion.
Chapter 4

Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian composition in the context of sixteenth to eighteenth centuries bardic literature

Section 1 General features of sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian ašuƗ literature in Armenian

As argued in Chapter 2, the form of bardic composition under examination represents basically one core tradition regardless of ethnicity and language. Hence, it is only once the contours of that tradition have been established that it is possible to consider areas of possible diversity among the practitioners during this period. Within this context, I would argue that the Armeno-Turkish songs and Armenian songs of sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian ašuƗs do not differ fundamentally in style. Songs in both categories are composed in the Armenian ašuƗs’ local dialects, either Armenian or Turkic. They cover the same major topics of love and moral-religious teaching, as well as others relating to personal experiences, current events, etc., though in much fewer numbers. However, among the published songs of sixteenth to eighteenth century ašuƗs, Armenian compositions feature some themes distinct from those in Armeno-Turkish songs. For example, there is no long narrative Armeno-Turkish dastan songs so far published, while several exist in Armenian, as mentioned in the section on bardic themes in Chapter 3.¹ Armenian songs even include some minor themes not

¹ All these are included in Sahakyan, 1961, the first two in n. 17, chapter 3. Safar Ölî on the earthquake in Yerevan: pp. 355-356. Čerean Ölî Minas on the earthquake in Constantinople: pp. 336-337; on the metropolis: pp. 343-354.
represented in bardic songs written in Turkic. Additionally, there are lyrics to the pen or other utensils for their usefulness,\(^2\) topics absent in Armeno-Turkish songs as well as in Turkic aşık/aşıq songs. Among Yart’un Ölli’s Armenian works, there is a \textit{yalanlama}, i.e. humorous song comprised of absurdities\(^3\). Regarding marriage and family life, Łul Ėgaz has a song in the voice of a woman lamenting her unhappy marriage, while Yart’un Ölli has one written in simple classical Armenian in the voice of a bride to her own family before departing to join her bridegroom, and another in colloquial Armenian in the idiom of a mother admonishing her daughter.

As in the case of Ottoman aşıks, some of whom composed in literary Ottoman Turkish resembling that of divan literature, some more educated Armenian aşuƗs composed a few songs in a register closer to classical Armenian, though the numbers are insignificant both in the context of sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian aşuƗ literature and in proportion to the range of Turkish aşık songs in the higher register. Only one stylistic difference between songs in Armenian and in Turkic vernaculars deserves mention, that of the degree of delicacy in the depiction of female beauty. In the works of Turkic bards’ together with Armeno-Turkish aşuƗ songs the depiction of female beauty is more general and less detailed. The bards often focus on no more than three features of the belle in describing her beauty, often doing so in one stanza. Armenian songs, in contrast, extend the description to more than two stanzas on occasion with fuller depiction of the belle’s physical attributes, ornaments, inner merits,

---

\(^{2}\) Łul Arzuni’s \textit{Grič’ “Pen”}: Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 85-87, as mentioned in Chapter 3, n. 19.

\(^{3}\) Sahakyan 1961, pp. 247-248, as noted in Chapter 3, n. 34.
and reactions from people who view the belle, in tropes, metaphors and exaggerations
and/or the use of other rhetorical figures. I would argue that this tendency attains its
apex in Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian works. In the coming sections I will discuss this issue
in more detail, while in Chapter 5 I will analyze the plausible literary sources for it in
the elevate poetic traditions of the region.

Apart from formal, thematic, and narrower stylistic differences between ašuƗ songs
in Armenian and those in Turkic vernaculars, there seem to be genuine regional
differences manifest in the forms of Tiflis Armenian ašuƗs’ Armenian songs as well.
The first significant characteristic is their employment of the muxammez genre and
songs of five-line stanzas more frequently than any of their counterparts, either
Armenian ašuƗs outside Kartli, or Turkic aşık/aşıqs from the Caucasus, since this genre
is rarely witnessed outside the works of Tiflis Armenian ašuƗs’ at all, while Sayat’-Nova,
Šamč`i Melk`ō, and K`ič`ik`-Nova, the three major Tiflis Armenian ašuƗs of the
sixteenth to eighteenth centuries, all have works transmitted in this genre. The second
is that they possess more songs with longer lines. The muxammez genre itself, which
constitutes a large proportion of Tiflis Armenian ašuƗs’ songs, normally requires 14-16
syllables per line. Similarly, several Tiflis Armenian ašuƗs’ quatrains also feature 14-16
syllable lines, while Armenian ašuƗs from other regions prefer lines of 8 or 11 syllables
(semai or qoshma). Sayat’-Nova appears quite late in the period under research, but is
the earliest Tiflis Armenian ašuƗ whose songs have come down to us. It appears that
some aspects of the divergence can be attributed to the growing complexity of
Armenian ašuƗ literature over this period. However, later Isfahani Armenian ašuƗs from
Amir Öli on, and Doni and Artem from South-Eastern Caucasus continued to use the semai and koshma forms with lines of 8 or 11 syllables more frequently.

Section 2 General features of Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs

Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs are accepted as his most popular and artistically most acclaimed works. Until today most of the research literature also highlights this aspect of his output. In order to achieve a more synthetic understanding of his compositional creativity I will discuss several facets of his Azeri songs by way of comparison.

One major difference between Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs and those in Georgian and Azeri is the existence of melodies to about 30 of his Armenian songs that were passed down orally until sound recording technology was brought to Tiflis. Indeed, they continue to be sung to this day. Levonyan mistakenly interpreted earlier discussions of the bard’s musical ability to the effect that some of the melodies were pre-existing Persian tunes that the bard then adapted to his lyrics. However, T’ahmizyan has convincingly shown that the bard’s notes relate songs in the same mode (yang) but not the identical melody (efanak). Two further problems, however, still remain regarding these melodies and their transmission. The mere fact that these songs were still being sung decades after Sayat’-Nova’s fall from favor and death is itself a

---

4 For the history of the collection and studies of these melodies, see Hasmik Injejikian, Sayat Nova and Armenian Ashoogh musical tradition, MA thesis, McGill University, Montreal, 1990, pp. 21-24. For the affirmative ideas, see for example, N. T’ahmizyan, “Sayat’-Novayi hayeren erkeri efanakneri masin”, Telekagir, X (1963), pp. 35-58 and Baxč’inyan, 1988, p. 146.

firm proof of their popularity. But since all ašuƗ rhythmic works are intended to be sung, why do none of his Georgian or Azeri songs survive? Other than the simplest explanation that Sayat`-Nova’s Armenian songs are the artistically most accomplished of his trilingual corpus, is it possible to attribute the phenomenon at least partly to the difference in the accessibility of these songs. This relates to questions of the diverse audience for his songs, a topic I shall explore in more detail in a later section.

The next issue concerns the script Sayat`-Nova used for his Armenian songs in the Davt`ar.⁶ There the bard used the Georgian script rather than Armenian to record the Armenian dialect of Tiflis, which would be his mother tongue, judging by his parents’ origin. The Georgian script is not better accommodated to the phonetic system of Tiflis Armenian than its Armenian counterpart, since it lacks a character for schwa and the differentiation of two trills r and ř. In contrast, he uses the Armenian script to record Azeri songs, indicating his familiarity with that alphabet also. The pronunciation of the Tiflis dialect as reflected in Sayat`-Nova’s transcription in Georgian script differs from classical Armenian and the traditional Armenian orthography based on the latter with regards to the surd/voiced or aspiration of explosive consonants, which often differ from each other.⁷ If we assume that Sayat`-Nova possessed knowledge of classical Armenian and its orthography at that time, it would seem reasonable to assume further that this difference in pronunciation led the bard to adapt the Georgian script to clearly represent sounds in Tiflis Armenian in order to avoid the confusion likely to emerge

---

⁶ See also Chapter 3, section 3.
from employing rather the Armenian script.

Now I shall review the four major literary aspects of Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs. In the Davt’ar he used more genres in his Armenian songs than any other early modern Armenian aşuł. For example, t’aslib,\(^8\) uč’lama,\(^9\) larhej\(^{a}\) etc. are peculiar to him in the works of Armenian aşułs. Nevertheless, he records less genre names for his Armenian songs than those in Azeri. But this quantitative difference does not necessarily lead to any qualitative conclusion on his ability at adapting genres from Turkic to Armenian, several of which appear unique to him, not featuring in Armenian songs either before or after him. After all, the total number of his Armenian songs amounts to little more than half his Azeri works.

Both Levonyan and Baxč’inyan have already discussed the diversity and innovation of Sayat’-Nova’s rhymes, and their arguments are predominantly based on Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian works.\(^{11}\) Yet it should be said that even though Sayat’-Nova uses more technically complex genres in his Azeri rather than his Armenian songs, this does not necessarily improve the former’s overall quality as will be noted. Apart from the conclusions reached by Levonyan and Baxč’inyan, another striking difference between Sayat’-Nova and other sixteenth to eighteenth cc. Armenian aşułs (and most Turkic aşık/aşıqs from that period as well) is the former’s use of prosodies with longer lines more often in his Armenian songs than his Georgian and even more frequently

---

\(^8\) Baxč’inyan’s Armenian songs Nos. 6, 7, 22, 32, 35.

\(^9\) Baxč’inyan’s Armenian song No. 36.

\(^{10}\) Baxč’inyan’s Armenian song No. 53, from Ioane’s manuscript.

\(^{11}\) Levonyan’s views have been listed in Chapter 3, as quoted from AšuƗnerê ev nranc’ arvestê, pp. 87-98. See Baxč’inyan, 1987, pp. 237-263.
than those in Azeri. As stated in chapter 3, the most popular genres for sixteenth to eighteenth century bards are the semai with 8 syllable lines and the qoshma with 11 syllable lines. But for Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs in the two manuscripts the number of songs with 14-16 syllable lines accounts for 32 out of 55, with a percentage of 58.18%. Meanwhile, if only the Davt’ar is taken into consideration, the result is 28 out of 47, 59.57%, while in Georgian it is 13 out of 34 (i.e. 38.24%) and Azeri only a meager 15 out of 117 (12.82%). Longer lines allow for richer, more varied content, which might also have contributed to the greater success of Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs.

A comparison of eulogies of the beloved by different ašuls in different meters may be the most revealing way to illustrate the contrast. Łul Yovhannēs has an extremely long eulogy of this kind commencing Goveli hōsn u jamald “Your praiseworthy beauty,” in which he described the most facets of the belle’s physical beauty ever to appear in Early Modern bardic songs, including reference to her fingers and nails. The song is written in the genre bayat`i, consisting of 7-syllable lines, while its stanzas unfold in this manner:

    Patkerov huri as du,
    Kam malayik’, t`ē llman as,
    P`aylum a loys eresd,
    Aregakan nman as du.  

12 Here I add all songs with lines longer than 11 syllables, including composite forms. Sayat’-Nova is good at creating composite forms by juxtaposing stanzas with different lengths together. The Georgian and Azeri numbers are counted likewise.
13 15 out of 108 in the Davt’ar; no song with lines more than 11 syllables occurs in Ohan’s manuscript.
(In image, you are a houri, 
Or an angel, or ghilman, 16
Your face radiates light,
You are sun-like.)

In contrast, Sayat’-Nova’s 16-syllable line łažali 17 opens with the stanza:

Diba u engidunia, zarbab u zar is, goveli, 
Hêndu diaremen ēkac zar-tılamk’ar is, goveli, 
Šat sovdak’ar k’iz ku pêtêre dun angin k’ar is, goveli, 
Antak covi mič’en hanac angin govhar is, goveli.

(You are brocade and “New World” cloth, gold-weave and gold, 18 Oh praiseworthy one, 
You are gold-painted cotton cloth coming from the land of India, Oh praiseworthy one, 
Many merchants are looking for you, you are a priceless [precious] stone, Oh praiseworthy one, 
You are a priceless pearl drawn from the bottomless sea, Oh praiseworthy one.)

Sayat’-Nova’s first line contains four tropes, while the usual pattern for Łul Yovhannēs is only two. Later in the poem Sayat’-Nova tends not to cluster more tropes or images in one line, since he had allowed himself plenty of space to embellish each image with more details, thus rendering it more vivid and memorable.

Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs parallel the thematic distribution of those in Azeri, the topics of love and religious/moral admonishment/allegory predominating. However, at 40 out of 55 in two manuscripts and 35 out of 47 in the Davt’ar, the proportion of

---

16 The reference is to the handsome young male servants in paradise according to the Qur’an.
17 Baxč’inyan’s Armenian song No. 4.
18 This line up to this point is translated by Dowsett. See Dowsett, 1997, p. 9.
love songs in his Armenian corpus is even larger, while other secular topics are rather minimal.\textsuperscript{19}

Yet apart from their proportional representation, the actual topics of Sayat’-Nova’s other Armenian secular songs are also of some interest. His theme of petition to the ruler is unique among all sixteenth to eighteenth century bards. In addition, laments on one’s own life form the topic of two of his secular compositions (Armenian songs Nos. 41 and 42), both of which are artistically elaborated. Of the two, the latter devoted to his instrument, the kamancha, is thematically more interesting as being unique in Sayat’-Nova’s works, though it is not the only one of its kind in this period. At least Azeri aşıq Qurbani has one piece on his saz as well.\textsuperscript{20} Though both are praise of the instrument, the latter is much shorter and obscure, as if abruptly cut short. This commonality suggests that composing lyric on their instruments was an accepted practice among sixteenth to eighteenth century bards.

We are probably justified in concluding that Sayat’-Nova left very few songs on purely secular social topics other than love, since the number of songs on those topics is more or less the same numerically in his Azeri songs, as in his Armenian and even Georgian songs as well (about 4-5). He has no composition on economic migrants (panduxt) nor any on places other than Armenian song No. 45 describing the church of St. George of MuƗni, the occasion for which, according to Baxč`inyan, was the completion of the renovation of that church in Tiflis.\textsuperscript{21} No songs exist concerning the

\textsuperscript{19} In fact, the proportion of love songs in Georgian might be even higher, about 25 out of 34.
\textsuperscript{20} “Ağacdandır”, \textit{Qurbani}, Kazimov, 1990, p. 55, as in footnote 20, Chapter 3.
\textsuperscript{21} Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 460.
major events in his lifetime, and therefore the genre of dastan, or long narrative song, is completely absent from Sayat’-Nova’s oeuvre. Of course not every sixteenth to eighteenth century bard possesses a dastan, or other songs on secular social topics other than love, including famous ones like Karacaoğlan and Qurbani. Furthermore, it should be said that lack of songs on secular topics other than love might not be considered as a drawback for sixteenth to eighteenth century bards, for this is rather the norm in that period. Beside Sayat’-Nova in his Armenian songs, Turkish aşık Karacaoğlan and Azerbaijani aşq Abbas Tufarğanlı deal mainly with love themes as well. In contrast, some minor Armenian aşuƗs like Łul Arzuni and Abdin Öli Hayrapet22 lack any love songs at all.

From the perspective of language, Sayat’-Nova has long enjoyed a reputation for the richness of his vocabulary, in that he almost flooded his songs with Persian and Turkish words and phrases. But in fact, he shares this feature at least with the Isfahani Armenian aşuƗs. I would argue that this fact should not be taken into consideration in isolation, but rather together with other aspects of his Armenian songs, primarily the handling of their themes and literary devices.

A noteworthy aspect of this relates to tropes based on concrete objects in use by all sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian aşuƗs where the material is referred to by its Persian or Turkic name more frequently than the Armenian equivalent. This is especially true of Sayat’-Nova, as reflected in the examples cited in this chapter, in

---

22 An eighteenth century New Julfän Armenian aşuƗ, who lived c. 1760s-1800s. It appears that he spent part of his life travelling. See Aram Eremeen, Parskahay aşuƗner, Tiflis, 1930, pp. 33-35.
which perhaps only vart` (rose), vart`ajur (rose water), mark`arit (pearl), lusin (moon) are Armenian nouns. Some of these items may have been known to them by their Persian and Turkic names alone, since their Armenian names may have circulated in a more elevated clerical circle. Though references to concrete objects are widespread in Sayat’-Nova’s songs, abstract vocabulary is rare to find, as in other sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian ašuls’ works. That might suggest that his education was not necessarily more advanced than other ašuls, and that his foreign vocabulary was more probably acquired from daily life in Tiflis as an entrepot serving Europe (including Russia), the Ottoman Empire, and the Iranian sphere. In contrast, the rich variety of names and features for textiles in Sayat’-Nova’s unique tropes (Ialamk`ari, diba, atlas, etc.) has led many scholars to propose that his second career may have been related to textiles, as a dyer or weaver.23

Section 3 The literary merits of Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs in comparison with his own Azeri songs and those of other Early Modern Armenian, Azerbaijani, and Turkish bards

My goal in this section is to obtain a clearer understanding of the status of Sayat’-Nova’s corpus of Armenian songs within the context of the contemporary bardic genre. Although scholars have given various appraisals of his status, those have often been based purely on readings of his Armenian poems or on general impressions from wider

23 For the traditions about his career as a weaver, see Baxč`inyan, 1988, pp. 42-44 and, for his two possible careers, Dowsett, pp. 8-10, 219, 231.
reading not anchored in a more systematic study of the subject. At the same time, I should mention that the comparison I am conducting involves only love songs, since this category boasts the largest pool of bardic works overall as also in the case of Sayat’-Nova. Moreover, it is precisely the bard’s love songs that have provoked most discussion and are broadly considered the most artistically successful aspect of his output.

All scholars agree on Sayat’-Nova’s singular excellence among all early modern Armenian ašuƗs, as reflected in his careful choice of words, appropriate in both their sound and meaning, fluent sentence construction and stanza continuity, affective, ardent, noble, and innovative, almost singular renderings of unrequited love, and vivid and subtle images and tropes, which are found less even in the same author’s Azeri songs. In the following sections, I shall develop the discussion concerning the norms of expression, rhetoric, display of emotion, and aesthetic standards exhibited in Sayat’-Nova’s songs to offer a comprehensive evaluation of his bardic skill.24

In Chapter 3 section3, I attempted a classification of the themes and forms of sixteenth to eighteenth century bardic love songs. Significantly, Sayat’-Nova practised every theme and sub-theme and employed every form listed there. Perhaps partly due to the vagaries of transmission, not every sixteenth to eighteenth century bard can boast the same profile. Thus, some Isfahani Armenian ašuƗs have no love song passed down to us, as is also understandably true for some Turkish military aşıkṣ. At the same time,

24 Certain aspects of Sayat’-Nova’s output have been excluded from discussion since they have been adequately dealt with by previous scholars. For the section on the image of alien and distant countries, see Baxč’inyan, 1988, p. 196, and, for some innovative tropes, pp. 196-206.
it is clear that in most of his love songs Sayat’-Nova follows the conventions of the well-tested composite structure of sixteenth to eighteenth century bards, first praising the beloved (in most cases for her physical beauty), then expressing the bard’s passion for her, often with lamentation on the suffering he bears from this love, in most cases the separation of the two, which is in turn mostly caused by the belle’s own mercilessness not to reward the bard by returning his affection, and at the end of the song, more often than not, he entreats his love’s leniency to requite his love, which in most cases implies a reunion.

To illustrate these features I will compare bardic songs written in this structure from different phases of the Early Modern period. Since the songs combining two or more tropes permit the inclusion of more topics, this type is artistically higher and more appealing than those featuring only one. This category is first attested in Qurbani’s songs dating to the sixteenth century, though it was not very common at that time. From Qurbani’s collection (1990) perhaps only four qoşmas combine the first two themes.25 Here the quotation is a four-stanza song, longer than the average three-stanza examples, and hence able to express more:

Ey şǝmi-pǝrvǝnǝ, Salatın pǝrı,  
Sǝnin hüsnün kimi mahtab olmaz.  
Didarına sǝnin müștaq olanın,  
Bidar olur, gözlǝrindǝ xab olmaz.

Bir qula ki, haqdan qǝzǝb olmasa,  
Gorda bir meyyitǝ azab olmasa,  
Aralıqda şǝytan, gǝzzǝb olmasa,

Dünya bərəhəm yeyüb, heç xarab olmaz.

Ey qaşları Kaman, kiprikleri ox,
Gözərləri hərami, qəmzərləri şux,
Gözəl adam, sən sevdim dəxə çox,
Könül versə hamı, kimsə bab olmaz.

Qurbani der, “Səndə çəxədur naxərim,
Burqədə yazılə sən mənim yərəm,
Ta sən sağ ol, tuti dilli nigarım,
Mən ölsəm, bu aləm heç xarab olmaz.”

Hey, candle and moth, peri Salatin,
There is no moonlight like your beauty.
To admirers of your eyes
There is wakefulness. In his eyes there is no sleep.

To a slave, if there is no rage from God,
To a dead man in the grave, if there is no misery,
The internal Satan, if it is not lying,
The world is devouring (all of them) recklessly, there is no devastation.

Hey, her eyebrows are bows, eyelashes arrows,
Her eyes marauders, her coquetry flirty,
Beautiful person, I loved you even more,
If the heart gives all, someone would be peerless.

Qurbani says, “You have much of my glance,
May it be written on the burqa, that you are my love,
As long as you are well, parrot-tongued belle,
If I die, this universe cannot be harmed.”)

The song expresses praise of the beloved’s physical beauty and the aşiq’s admiration for her. The second stanza seems like a combination of proverbs, which is not usual in Early Modern bardic songs, even for Qurbani. However, most of the...

27 Indeed, the frequency of proverbs and sayings in Sayat`-Nova’s works is higher than most Early Modern bards. For examples, see Baxč`inyan, 1988, pp. 147-187, and Aram Łanalanyan, Sayat`-Novayi stelcagorcuz yan zolovrdakan albyurnerê, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakčut’yun, Yerevan, 1963.
limited description of her physical beauty is concentrated in stanza three. Moreover, the
tropes or hyperboles like the candle and moth, eyebrows like bows, and eyelashes like
arrows are a staple of both Early Modern bardic songs and elevated poetry, though the
marauder-like eyes might be an innovation.

The famous eighteenth century Azeri aşıq Xəstə Qasım, who lived roughly 200 years after Qurbani, left around 50 love songs, less than half his collection. About 15 of them are in three stanzas, while a roughly equal number contain more than four stanzas. Though several of the longer works do not necessarily combine both themes, I have selected a song for comparison that affords both a combination of themes and longer volume:

Qəriblikdə məna həmdən olan yar,
Bir bəri gal, ayaqların qurbanı.
Şikəstə kənləmə məhəm olan yar,
Dəniş, dilin, dədaqların qurbanı.

O nə mudur? O nə xəldir? Nə bərdir?
Zülfərin əbrisən, təllərin zərdir,
Noğul deyil, nabat deyil, şəkərdir,
Səl ağzıma dədaqların qurbanı.

Kənləm istər yara qurban olmağa,
Dolanib başına heyran olmağa,
Ala gözlü yara mehman olmağa,
Fərş döşənməş otaqların qurbanı.

Maclısların zibəsən zeyisən,
Səhbətən, mazəsən, meyisən,
Oxuyusan alif, beyi, teyi sən,
Çevir dərsin varaların qurbanı.

---

Xəstə Qasım, sən yolunda azarsan,
Məcnun kimi səhraları gəzərsən,
Ala gözlü yara namə yazarsan,
Qələmdanın, barmaqların qurbanı.²⁹

(Darling who become my sincere companion In wandering,
Come here, victim of feet,
Darling, who become balm to my broken heart,
Speak, victim of tongue and lips.

What hair is that? What mole is that? What bosom is it?
Your hairlocks are silk, your forelocks are gold,
Not nugget, not lollipop, but sugar,
Put in my mouth, victim of lips.

My heart wants (me) to be sacrificed for the belle,
To adore her turning head,
To be the guest of the grey-eyed darling,
Victim of the rooms paved with carpets.

In feasts you are the beauty, you are the life,
You are the stock for talk, the appetizer, the wine.
You are the reading, the Alif, Be, Te,³⁰
Turn, victim of the class notes.

Xəstə Qasım, if you get lost on the way.
If you wander in the deserts like Majnun.
İf you write a letter to the grey-eyed darling,
Victim of the pencase, of the fingers.)

In this later work, the description of the darling’s physical beauty is not much more
detailed than the previous about two hundred years earlier, and the frequency of tropes
is not higher either. Still, the praise of the belle extends to two stanzas (two and four),
her physical beauty is described in more detail (not merely her hair per se, but also
hairlocks and forelocks), the self-identification as “slave” to various objects is less

³⁰ The first three letters of the Arabic alphabet.
normal, with more images like wandering and a feast, and even an allusion to Majnun presented.

While we might conclude that innovation in Azerbaijani aşıq love songs composed with combined themes is not very developed in the Early Modern period, in the Ottoman sphere, even the combined structure is hard to document from those three centuries, at least on the basis of Fuad Köprülü’s five-part collection. Only in the works of the eighteenth century Ottoman Armenian ašuł Xritar is one muxammez to be found that represents both praise and yearning (in this case even reproach), as reproduced below:

Aptal ēt`těn pēni xuplar sult`ani,
Čanêmēn čēnani sēnmisēn tilpar,
Rahm ēylē ear, rahm ēylērsē ear,
Šaz ālur pu ēan, pēn niĉē tīr eanam,
Ōlti čana k`ear, kēōniwl ě ěk`ēr zar, šōl lēppi siwk`k`ear.

Siwk`k`ear lēpēn palttēr, tīlērin lalatēr,
Eanaxtak`i xaltēr, āop`sēm vēpaltēr,
Ōl āgamēt`ēn taltēr, kēytkēn altēr,
Ĉōynēn iĉ`i kwiltēr, ōlmēš palc`ē par,
Pēk`lēr avčēlar, ōnta kwimman var, lōxar ayva, nar.

Narēn palc`asēnta kirēytim gana,
Lul ōlaytim sana, hēy sēvkili suna,
Eazarēm sult`ana, zulm ēylēr sana,
Kēl sēvtikim pana, vēr sēn pir ixrar,
Ēylēmēm ink`ēar, uyarsan ēkēr, fēta lēlim sēr.

Sērim lēlam fēta, ōl earē kitē,
Lōrqam sērxōs ōla iĉ`ińcēz patē,
Pusa vērtēn eatē, kēōrtim t`ēnhatē,
Ōlur mē xanētē, eōx mē namus ar,
(You turned me mad, magnificent lady,
You are the true love of my soul, love,
Show mercy, love, if you are merciful,
My soul would be pleasant; I have been burning for a long time.
Life is extinguished, the heart is in pai for the sugar-lipped one.

Her sugar lip is honey, her teeth are rubies,
The mole on her cheek, if I kiss, it is a crime.
Her stature is a bough, her dress is crimson,
There is a rose in her bosom, like fruit in a garden,
Lords and hunters have doubt about her, the pomegranate tht smells of quince.

The pomegranate in the garden made me shed blood,
I became your slave, hey dear turtledove!
I shall write to the Sultan to let him/her torture you,
Come to me, my love, give a confession!
I would not refuse, if you comply, I would sacrifice my life.

I shall sacrifice my life, but the belle is going away.
I fear that she will get drunk when she drinks wine.
She gave a kiss to a stranger, I saw it beside myself.
Would she get home? Or seek shame?
Your slave Xritar, eyes melted, cries for mercy.)

It is unfortunate that since biographical information on Xritar is so meagre, it is almost impossible to discover where in the Ottoman Empire he lived and whether the combination of themes in his composition, unique in the Ottoman sphere, depended on any Azerbaijani influence. The plot of the song is interesting and unique in early modern bardic literature, since it portrays the beloved’s betrayal at the end, contrary to the bard’s conventional situation of merely crying for a reunion. However, the description of the beloved’s physical beauty and the tropes are still conventional.

31 For the Armeno-Turkish text, see Amirean, 1989, p. 56 and, for the Armenian translation, p. 57. Much of the English rendering is based on the Armenian translation.
Let us now examine the situation in bardic songs in Armenian. There the combined structure appeared in some songs by Łul Ėgaz, the first ašul whose works have come down to us in Armenian, who flourished in the second half of the seventeenth and early eighteenth century:

Es k`ez veray hēnc` karōt em,
Zor carawn axbri veray,
K`oy sērn ini ērēl ay,
Zor jurn aces kri veray.

Anuš hotèd buĩ buĩ ku gay,
Es duśman č`em, č`um cuʁ ku gay,
Cicèt coc`umt šuʁ ku gay,
Zor jknern jri veray.

Lizut beranumt baʁ ku tay,
Aĉ`kt yeresıt ţ`aʁ ktay,
Xaln ēresıt xaw ktay,
Inĉ` ĵuarn ţ`ri veray.

Ov or earin kasi vasn day,
Amenayn dardē azat ay,
Eari šalavat`n šat ay,
Buxtn ktay jri veray.

Łul Ėgazn k`ez inĉ` arar,
Šilac`uc`ir xelk`n tarar,
Łul ku grvem k`ez mułarar,
Anumt patmir gri veray.32

(I am just longing for you,
Thirsty for news about you.
Your love burned me,
As you pour water on lime.

Your sweet smell comes in waves,
I am not an enemy, why does it waft round me?

32 No. 5, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 76.
Your nipples move in your bosom,
Like fish in water.

Your tongue in your mouth gives a word,
Your eyes stare at your face,
The mole lies on your face,
Like a jewel on a sword.

Whoever tells the darling about it,
Is free from all sorts of pains,
The belle’s generosity is abundant,
Defamation she will give to water (to carry away).

What did Łul Ėgaz do to you?
You paralyzed his brain.
I, the Slave\(^{33}\), am incessantly inscribed for you as a slave,
Tell your name in writing!)

So far the frequency of tropes in bardic songs in both Turkic and Armenian is one or two per line on average. It is more normal that they occur in the middle stanzas, rather than the first or last, but this convention is broken in Łul Yovhannēs’ song above.

There is one trope in every last line of the first four stanzas, which represents the only trope in the whole stanza, so that the overall quantity of tropes in this song parallels previous examples. Nevertheless, the four tropes are all quite unique in quality, thus constituting the most impressive aspect of the song, which is conventional in other respects. This emerges especially in comparison with later songs, for example, the one by Łul Yovhannēs below:

Ear, k’o tesoyn grftʿar am, earab dardis darman kanes,
Mayil am sirun hōsnud, mah jamalid hēyran kanes,
Du huri as, t’en ěnsan as, hař dam mēk nšan kanes,

\(^{33}\) I.e., \textit{lul}.
T’agawor as u kayser as, veray taltin nʃan kanes,
Varvum as maʃali pʃs, c’ok’ kolmd jraluan kanes.

Eresd çaragayt’a, mist p’aylum as du mularar,
Zorel as hraʃapəs, lusawores t’amam aʃxrəh,
Arəwoteb bblbli pəs k’zart’nes dam sahar,
K’alʃ rik jënəd lənluələv c’əc’ ay ktas mist andadar,
Anmahakan bali məjn var’i verən səhrən kanes.

Du mək t’arlan şahunbaʃ as, otumd kay gulabaʃ’n,
Sim oskeay, jayavirov marjan c’arac həməmatn,
Inə’ ərinakov sahmanac, zardarac a k’o surat’n,
Ov ok’ tesni, erani tä Astcu tuac amanat’n,
Du iʃxan as t’rə’ noc’, k’ez t’awusi nman kanes.

Arewelic’ minə’ arewmut es um berem vasməd ani?
T’ay c’unes holelinum, arəni as huri Ilmani.
Eoʃnasun erku azgün minn c’kay k’ez nman,
Aregak u lusniakn, t’ə’ endonk’ lini k’ez ěntani,
K’ez tuac a hosn aʃxarhi, əl inə’ bani guman kanes.

Ari, asa, əl Yovhannəs, onc’ kuʃtanas k’o earic’n?
C’ em uzum ac’k’ s xp’ em mək sahat’ k’ o didaric’n,
K’ez em uzum, mit’ə ayloʃ’ jeʃ am k’əʃel aʃxarhic’n,
Mək ər am k’ez xəsk’n tuəl, yet c’em daʃnal iləric’n,
Əs asel am, jan as, k’ezı hmar jans lurən kanem.34

(Darling, I am the captive of your good looks. Would that you would heal my pain.
I prefer your lovely beauty, your moon-like beauty causes admiration.
Are you a houri or a human, you appear every moment,
You are a king, and you are a Caesar, you appear on the throne,
You are burning like a torch, you illumine the four directions around you.

Your face is a beam, you are always shining, incessantly,
You are wonderfully powerful, you illuminate the whole world,
Like a morning nightingale, you wake the dew at dawn,
From your sweet voice you incessantly bring forward “chacha” by a gale,
From the top of the rose in the immortal garden you circle.

You are a falcon in the royal garden, at your feet are rose thickets,
Golden, silver, coral with jewel are incomparable,
On what model is your face fashioned and decorated?

---

34 No. 5, Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 165-166.
Whoever sees it gives bliss to God-given trust,  
You are the prince of birds. You are peacock-like.

From East to West, whom should I bring to praise you?  
You have no peer among the earthly, you are worthy of a houri’s slavery,  
There is not a single one similar to you among the seventy-two races,  
Sun and moon, they are your familiars.  
The beauty of the world is given to you, why should you doubt?

“Come!” I said, John the slave, how could you have enough of your darling?  
I do not want to blink my eyes one moment from looking at you,  
I want you, have I pulled others by the hand from the world?  
I gave you my word one day, after that I have not turned away from my pledge.  
I told you this, you are my life, for you I would sacrifice my life.)

In this muxammaz, or song made up of five-line stanzas, the praise of the belle permeates the first four stanzas, with tropes in each, more detailed and more vivid.  
Those tropes like the one on the torch or the falcon in the royal garden are quite unique.  
The one on the nightingale is thematically conventional, but incorporates much more detail, rendering the image unique and impressive. In general, the emotional content of this song represents much more verve and vivacity than previous examples.

Let us now consider one of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs in comparison:

Dery[a]dan ē`xup`san, xob inǰi-marǰan,  
Łimet[l]u javahir lal arasinda,  
Yar, dilun šak`ardur, dēhanun şuša,  
Lablarun badamdur, bal arasinda.

Gal gozal, řahm ėyla, lanumi girma,  
Dišlarun inǰi t`ak’ duzulmiš širma,  
Sač`larun šarbabı, zilp`larun sirma,  
Jamalun ſamardur xal arasinda.

35 The meaning of Łul Yovhannēs.
Yavri k`ak`lig k`imi dala sak`ılmıš,
Łoynı baldur, šir šamamdan ak`ılmıš,
Ēla bildum, hadidadan č`ak`ılmıš,
Inja belin t`irman šal arasinda.

Zar p`ranı şah başından lač`ılmıš,
Banovšasan behest balda sač`ılmıš,
Alagozlar gul-lonç`adan ač`ılmıš,
Jīla laš boyanmıš sal arasinda.

Ēšx ustina varup`, birdan almišam,
Balrumi dalup`dur, t`ırdan almišam,
Sayat`-Novam, diar p`ırdan almišam,
But`am, san č`ëxup`san p`al almišam.36

(From the sea you have taken fine pearls and coral,
Their worth among those of jewels and rubies,
Beloved, your tongue is sugar, your mouth a cup,
Your lips are almonds coated with honey.

Come, beauteous one, have mercy, do not enter my blood,
Your teeth are like pearls set in ivory,
Your hair is satin, your [hair]locks are silk,
Your beauty is (that of) the moon (with) a mole on it.

Like a baby partridge you staggered to the mountain,
Your bosom is a garden, [where] milk dripped from melon,
I thought that your slim waist was dragged from the anvil,
[It] is in the precious handmade shawl.

The Frankish gold was spared from the shah’s tax,
You are a violet, chosen in the garden of paradise,
Your grey eyes are revealed from rosebuds,
Your corona-like eyebrows are in the middle of painted slabs.

Coming upon love, all of a sudden I took one,
My liver is burning, I took it from an arrow.
I am Sayat`-Nova who says, “I took it from a sage,”
My idol, you emerge [when] I took auguries.)

---

36 Az. No. 71, Baxč`inyan, 1987, pp. 244-247. Dowsett has included the transcription of its first two stanzas and an English translation in his monograph, for which, see Dowsett, 1997, pp. 278-279. I have quoted it here. Words in parentheses are his addition, while those in square brackets are mine.
Here, the average frequency of tropes in the first four stanzas is more than one per line, since though very few lines (e.g. the first line in the second stanza and the last line in the third) that lack tropes, most of the other lines including more than one. Moreover, many tropes do not occur separately, but appear together to build a more complete image, like those relating to the beloved’s tongue, mouth, and lip in the first stanza. Consequently, those composite images are even more appealing. The tropes and images here, like those on the baby partridge, the bosom (milk dripping from a melon), and eyebrows (“in the middle of dyed slabs”) are already very innovative and impressive.

Let us now compare one of his representative Armenian songs:

Ašxaruměs ax ě’im k’əši, k’ani vur ǰan is inj ama.
Anmahakan ĵërov lik’ən, őske p’ənjan is inj ama,
Nêstím, vêres šëvak’ anis zarbab vêran is inj ama,
Suč’ s imac’i, ěnenc’ spane sult’an u xan is inj ama.

Meč’kët salbu-č’inari pes, řangêt P’ërangji atlas ě,
Lizut šak’ar, pêrošët land, akrek’ët mark’ri, almas ě,
Ōsku meč’ën mina arac, ač’kîret, aknakap t’as ě,
Patvakan angin jahahir, lal-Badešxan is inj ama.

Yis ěs dardin vunc’ dimanam? Makam sirtës unim k’arac,
Artasunk’ s arun šinec’ir, xilk’ën gêlxes unim tarac,
Nur bal is, nur balč’i meč’ën bolork’ët vart’ov ě’ap’arac,
Vëret šuř gam bêlbuli pes sirov seyran is inj ama.

K’u ěšxën inji mast arav, yis zart’un im, sirtës ě k’nac,
Âšxars ašxarov këštac’av, im sirtës k’iznic’ sov mënac’,
Yar, k’iz inč’ov t’arip’ anim? Ašxarumës ban ě’êmënac’,
Krake covemen dus ěkac, řaš u jeyran is inj ama.

Inč’ kuli mek hides xosis, t’evur Sayat’-Novu yar is,
Šulkët ašxarës bërnil ě aregagi demën p’ar is,
Hutov hil, mixak, dark’in, vart’, manušak, susanbar is,
In this world I shall sigh no sigh, since you are life-and-soul for me,
Filled with immortal water, You are a golden cup for me.
When I visit, you give me shade: you are a silken tent for me,
If you understand me to sin, slay me for it: you are Sultan and Khan for me.

Your figure is like the poplar and the cypress, your complexion is like European satin,
Your tongue is sugar, your lips are candy, your teeth pearls and diamonds,
Like blue-beads set in gold, your eyes are a begemmed cup,
Precious, priceless jewel, you are a Badeshkhan\textsuperscript{39} ruby for me.

How can I withstand this torment, when my heart is pelted so with stones?
You have turned my tears to blood, reason is taken from my head,
You are a newly planted garden, the middle plot of which is measured round by rose,
Over you like a nightingale would I wander: you are a vision of Love for me.

Love for you has made me drunk: I am awake, but my heart is numb,
This world is crammed with people, but my heart is starved of you,
Beloved, with what shall I praise you, in my world nothing remains (that I could use as a fitting image),
Risen from a sea of fire, you are Râsh\textsuperscript{40} and a gazelle for me.

How would it be if you spoke to me, saying you are Sayat`-Nova’s beloved?
Your splendor has enveloped the world, your glory vies with the sun,
Fragrant cardamom, cloves, cinnamon, rose, violet, water-mint,
Crimson blossom of the plain, you are the shepherd’s lily\textsuperscript{41} for me.

In this Armenian song the frequency of tropes might not be as high as its Azeri counterpart, but the innovativeness (a golden cup filled with the water of immortality,\textsuperscript{37}}
a shade-giving silken tent) and the vividness of the images (eyes like blue beads set in gold, a steed and gazelle risen from a sea of fire), and the ardor of the passion (“If you understand me to sin, slay me for it: you are sultan and khan for me;” “This world is crammed with people, but my heart is starved of you”), surpass not only the previous example, but all the previous songs. Sayat’-Nova also combined more “exotic flavor” (satin of West European origin (“Frankish” in the original) united with a ruby from Badakhshan) and allusion (Rakhsh, the steed of Rustam in Shahnameh; and the Lily of the valley from the biblical book Song of Songs) in this song, thus adding to its impressive qualities.

Though the plot structure does not differ much from those of other bards, as a combination of all major the sub-themes in bardic love songs, this structure would be the most impressive and moving for the audience. After the combined formulae for the sub-genre güzellemə, the bard has few works of pure praise of the beloved’s physical beauty, or şikayətnamə and pure lament on unrequited love in the strict sense.

It also appears that Sayat’-Nova innovated in the structure of two other common types of sixteenth to eighteenth century bardic love songs. The first relates to the dialogue between lovers, which features in Armenian song No. 17 composed purely in the voice of the așuƗ’s love, and the preceding, which comprises a more extended discussion between the lovers. The second type refers to songs featuring the rose and nightingale motif, which is not found very often in sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian așuƗs’ works.42 In contrast, Sayat’-Nova not only makes frequent allusion to

42 Şamč’-i-Melk’o possesses two songs on the motif of the rose and nightingale.
the motif in his songs, but composes Armenian song No. 7 in the form of a dialogue between the nightingale and the ašuƗ, rather than the standard third person narration of a dialogue between the nightingale and the rose, or other flowers/birds in the garden. This innovation is unparalleled in the oeuvre of other sixteenth to eighteenth century bards.

Now let us turn to the rhetorical aspects of Sayat`-Nova’s songs. Our listing of the major rhetorical figures employed in Early Modern bardic compositions at the beginning of chapter 3 helped verify the conclusion that Sayat`-Nova utilized the complete range, a profile unmatched by many of his counterparts. Building on that foundation, let us explore the tropes Sayat`-Nova applied to portray the beloved’s beauty. For Sayat`-Nova’s readers perhaps it is precisely his tropes that would initially captivate them. As scholars have concluded, tropes on jewels, other precious stones and precious metals, textiles, flowers, spices, and perfumes, fragrant herbs etc. are very popular in Sayat`-Nova’s Armenian songs, while tropes on animals, trees, and stars are also found. These images encompass all the senses (sight, hearing, taste, smell, and touch) to some degree, a finding that, however, also holds true for other bards of Sayat`-Nova’s caliber in representing most of the above categories, thus necessitating a more in-depth examination of the standard range. By way of preface, one should note that Sayat`-Nova possesses a number of unique examples unparalleled in the oeuvre of other bards, e.g. comparing the beloved to musical instruments like the santur, kamancha,
chang,\textsuperscript{43} or to writing implements,\textsuperscript{44} or the comparison of the beloved’s fingers to candles.\textsuperscript{45}

Tropes frequently occurring in Sayat’Nova’s Armenian songs:

A. jewels, other precious stones and precious metals:

\[\text{Yis k’u limet’ěn č’im gidi}
\text{Javahir k’ari něman is.}\textsuperscript{46}
\]

(I do not know your value,
You are like [a] precious stone.)

\[\text{Akřek’ět yaƗut’-almas ė.}\textsuperscript{47}
\]

(Your teeth are rubies and diamonds)

\[\text{……akřek’ět mark’rit, almas ė,}
\text{Ōsku meč’ěn mina arac, ač’kirět, aknakap t’as ė,}
\text{Patvakan angin Javahir, lal-Badešxan is inj ama.}\textsuperscript{48}
\]

(…… your teeth are pearls and diamonds,
[Like] enameled [beads] in gold, your eyes are a jewel-embedded cup.
You are a precious priceless gem, Badakhshan ruby for me.)

\[\text{Mark’aritov lik’ěn kal is, sadap’nírět t’ura-t’ura,}
\text{Ērcat’e koxpek’ov koxpac, dun, ôske řaza is, aziz.}\textsuperscript{49}
\]

(You are a stand full of pearls, all sorts of mother-of-pearl,
You are a golden bolt, locked with a silver lock, dear.)

\textsuperscript{43}Arm. No. 3, lines 56-57. Such tropes are not found in his Azeri songs, but those in Georgian, on which, see Baxč’inyan, 1988, p. 196.
\textsuperscript{44}For example, the collection of lives of saints, or Aysmavurk’ in Armenian: Arm. No. 8, line 20; Arm. No. 27, line 3: Baxč’inyan, 1988, p. 197.
\textsuperscript{45}Arm. No. 23, line 12; Arm. No. 47, line 29. See Baxč’inyan, 1988, pp. 202-203.
\textsuperscript{46}Arm. No. 6, lines 1-2. For Dowsett’s transliteration and translation, see Dowsett, 1997, p. 280.
\textsuperscript{47}Arm. No. 6, line 10.
\textsuperscript{48}Arm. No. 16, lines 6-8. For Dowsett’s transliteration, literal translation and artistic translation (transplanting the original rhyme scheme), see Dowsett, 1997, pp. 263-264.
B. textiles:

Řangēt P`ěrangi atlas ė,
Zar-İalamk`ari nēman is\textsuperscript{50}.

(Your luster is that of European satin,
You are like gold-painted cotton cloth.)

Me biřeš P`ěrangi atlas ė, talis ė šovƗ u šap`aƚat`,\textsuperscript{51}

(It is a load of European satin, shining and gleaning.)

C. flowers\textsuperscript{52}:

Cuc`it meč`ën vart`, manišak, sêmbul u susan is şini,
K`u terẽn baƚen inč` konowe K`u hutẽn ĭtean is şini.\textsuperscript{53}

(You have grown rose, violet, hyacinth and lily between your breasts,
What will your master do with the garden? You have made your scent like basil.)

D. fragrant herbs, spices and perfumes:

Me biřeš lɛrmẽz u zap`rang, me biřeš ėl zanjap`iƚ a,
Me k`ani biřeš darič`in, me biřeš ė ƚaranp`iƚ a.\textsuperscript{54}

(A load of red [dyer] and saffron, also a load of ginger;
A few loads of cinnamon, also a load of clove.)

\textsuperscript{50} Arm. No. 6, lines 11-12.
\textsuperscript{51} Arm. No. 10, lines 11-12.
\textsuperscript{52} Phrases including vart`/gul “rose” or baƚ/baƚ̤ “garden” are already such clichéş in Sayat’-Nova’s corpus that I decided not to quote single occurrences here.
\textsuperscript{53} Arm. No. 31, lines 13-14. The translation is partially based on Dowsett’s paraphrase, for which, see Dowsett, 1997, p. 387.
\textsuperscript{54} Arm. No. 10, lines 16-17.
Vart’ajêrov t’ac’ is ēli.\textsuperscript{55}

(You are moistened with rose water.)

Hutêt ašxarêt bêrnil ê, bernumt unis zanjap’îlên,
Kanc’ k’iz lav hut č’i unena Hëndû ēkac ţaranp’îlên.\textsuperscript{56}

(Your scent has caught your world; you have ginger in your mouth. Even cloves from India do not have scent better than yours.)

E. animals\textsuperscript{57}:

Krake, covemen dus ēkac, râš u jeyran is inj ama.\textsuperscript{58}

(You are a Rakhsh and antelope that has emerged from fire, from the sea, for me.)

Yip’ nêstum is t’ut’i luš is, yip’ kangnum is râš, nazani.\textsuperscript{59}

(When you sit, you are parrot, when you stand, you are Rakhsh, O graceful one!)

F. fruits and desserts:

Pêrošnîrêt nabat’ unis,
Łand u šak’ari nêman is.\textsuperscript{60}

(Your lips have rock candy, You are like sugar and candy.)

\textsuperscript{55} Arm. No. 22, line 3.
\textsuperscript{56} Arm. No. 38, lines 5-6.
\textsuperscript{57} Likewise, the single occurrence of bêlbul/bulbul is omitted here.
\textsuperscript{58} Arm. No. 16, line 16. This is my own translation.
\textsuperscript{59} Arm. No. 26, line 16.
\textsuperscript{60} Arm. No. 6, lines 7-8.
Éndu hama carav mart’ěn k’u jèremen č’i kěštana,
Šírazu šušumèn acac nabad’è šarbat’èn dun is. 61

(For this thirsty person cannot be satiated by your water,
You are syrup with rock candy in Shiraz glass.)

Xoskirèt k’alc’r, k’alc’r ē, lizut šak’ar u nabad’è,
Xèmolin vènas č’i ani, jerit bĕrnacèn šarbat’è. 62

(Your words are sweet, sweet, your tongue is sugar and rock candy,
It will bring the drinker no harm, what your hand holds is syrup.)

G. stars:

Éresèt ē šamš u łamar. 63

(Your face is sun and moon.)

Éresèt nur lusni nèman k’ani keha, ku bolèrvi. 64

(Your face is like moonlight, whenever it appears, it radiates.)

H. trees 65:

Meč’kèt salbu-è’inari pes, … 66

(Your back is like a cypress, a plane tree.)

61 Arm. No. 28, lines 15-16.
63 Arm. No. 22, line 16.
64 Arm. No. 31, line 5.
65 Generally speaking, this category is very rare in Sayat´-Nova´s works.
66 Arm. No. 16, line 5. This is my own translation.
Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs:

A. jewels, other precious stones and precious metals:

Dery[a]dan č’ëxup’san, xob inji-marjan, Łimet'[l]u javahir lal arasinda. 67

(From the sea you have taken fine pearls and coral, Their worth [is] among that of jewels and rubies,)

Gel! Ač’ginan malun, javahir-zurmaxt. 68

(Come! Reveal your wealth, jewel-emerald.)

B. textiles:

Łalami hěndisan nałšun bulanmaz. 69

(You are Indian painted cotton cloth, your pattern is unique.)

C. flowers:

Běhar yasamanisan, yarp’alun xuni. Dalda banovšasan, balč’ ada nargiz. 70

(You are the lilac of spring, your leaves (are) blood red. You are the violet on the mountain, narcissus in the garden.)

D. fragrant herbs, spices and perfumes:

67 Az. No. 71, lines 1-2. For Dowssett’s translation, see Dowssett, 1997, p. 279.
68 Az. No. 79, line 18.
69 Az. No. 40, line 1.
70 Az. No. 40, lines 3-4.
Jamalun aynadur, jan ēdar zarinj.  
(Your beauty is a mirror, your soul makes resin.)

E. animals:

Dilui dudi bulbul k’imi őt’eir.  
(Your tongue sings like a parrot, like a nightingale.)

F. fruits and desserts:

Yar, dilun šak`ardur, dēhanun šuša.  
Lablarun badamdur, bal arasinda.  
(Beloved, your tongue is sugar, your mouth a cup,  
Your lips are almonds, coated with honey.)

G. luminaries:

Mah-Jamali, łamarlu yar geleir.  
(The moon-faced, moon-like beloved comes.)

---

71 Az. No. 36, line 2. For Dowsett’s transliteration and translation, see Dowsett, 1997, pp. 248-250. However, this trope is controversial, according to Dowsett, who interpreted zarinj as zarang/zarǝng in Persian/Azeri, “beech”. In that sense it cannot be construed in this text. “Resin” is based on the Armenian translation, for which, see Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 187.

72 Az. No. 42, line 1. Unfortunately, it is translated in a third person voice in Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 197, but the first person (“My tongue sings like the lip of the Nightingale”) in Dowsett, 1997, p. 173. No reason for the rendering is given in either case. Therefore, I argue it can be interpreted in the second person as well, since the next line about the beloved’s teeth definitely demands the second person.

73 Az. No. 71. Lines 3-4. For Dowsett’s translation, see Dowsett, 1997, p. 279.

74 Az. No. 45, line 8.
Aydur jamalun, ilduzdur xalun.\textsuperscript{75}

(Your face is a moon, your mole is a star.)

H. trees:

Ładun neja oxšadeim č`inara,  \( \)  
Č`un č`inar odundur, yaxalar nara.\textsuperscript{76}

(How did I compare your stature to a plane tree? Because the plane tree is firewood, it burns in fire.)

To illustrate the approach of other sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian ašuls’ songs I have selected all the examples from Łul Yovhanńēs’ songs, since the latter’s tropes are the most varied of Armenian ašuls of this period other than Sayat´-Nova.

A. jewels, other precious stones, and precious metals:

Sinēd marmar k`ari nman.\textsuperscript{77}

(Your bosom is like marble stone).

Sim oskeay, jawahirov marjan č`arac hamematn.  
Inč` ārinakov sahmanac, zardarac a k`o surat`n.\textsuperscript{78}

(Golden silver, coral with jewel are incomparable. By what model is your face defined and adorned?)

\textsuperscript{75} Az. No. 79, line 17.
\textsuperscript{76} Az. No. 67, lines 9-10. For Dowsett’s transliteration and translation, see Dowsett, 1997, pp. 319-320.
\textsuperscript{77} No. 1, line 18, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 160.
\textsuperscript{78} No. 5, lines 12-13, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 165.
B. textiles: Not found.

C. flowers:

Vart` as, lalay as, asaman as, du řēhan as nazeli.⁷⁹
(You are a rose, lily, lilac, graceful; you are basil.)

D. fragrant herbs, spices and perfumes:

Anoyš as całkayin, or kas nman susambari.⁸⁰
(You are a floral aroma, when you stand like thyme.)

E. animals:

Arawōtean bbli pēs k’zart`nes dam sahar,
K’alc’rik jěnhed lunľunalov č’ač’ay ktas mist andadar.⁸¹
(Like a morning nightingale, you wake the dew at dawn,
From your sweet voice, you incessantly bring forward “chacha” by a gale.)

Du išxan as t’irč’noc’, k’ez t’awusi nman kanes.⁸²
(You are the prince of birds. You are peacock-like.)

F. fruits and desserts:

---
⁷⁹ No.4, line 10, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 164.
⁸⁰ No. 4, line 9, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 164.
⁸¹ No. 5, lines 8-9, Sahakean, 1961, p. 165.
⁸² No. 5, line 15, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 165.
Ceērd anoyš bari nman.\textsuperscript{83}

(Your breasts are like sweet fruits.)\textsuperscript{84}

G. stars:

Keē-keē unk`nerd nman lusniakin,
Ēd nman Ľudrat`i hilal č`em tesēl.\textsuperscript{85}

(Your hooked ears look like a new moon. 
A crescent as powerful as that I have not seen.)

H. trees:

Bōy unes č`inari pēs,
Salvi caři nman as.\textsuperscript{86}

(You have a stature like a plane tree,
You resemble a cypress.)

A number of conclusions can be drawn from the foregoing listing. The first is that Sayat`-Nova’s individual tropes are innovative, while the range of categories he employs emerges as much more conventional, as only the category of textiles is rarely attested in the works of other bards. Comprehensiveness of application and high

\textsuperscript{83} No. 1, line 19, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 161.
\textsuperscript{84} It is not without interest to mention here, that Ľul Yovhannēs’ disciple Yart`un Ŗli almost duplicated lines 18-19 (Footnotes 47, 53) from this song in his own work: Yart`un Ŗli’s song No. 1, lines 25-26, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 214.
\textsuperscript{85} No. 2, lines 11-12, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 162.
\textsuperscript{86} No. 6, lines 27-28, Sahakyan, 1961, p. 168.
frequency of use also characterize Sayat’-Nova’s profile over against his counterparts, few of whom use all the tropes. Indeed, it is common for a bard to utilize no more than half of the above categories.

In eighteenth-century songs, it is quite clear that the average frequency of tropes tends to increase over time in a trend more easily observable in Armenian songs. In Łul Yovhannēs’ songs it is not uncommon to find examples with three or more tropes per stanza, and two or three such stanzas per song (partly also because the five-stanza format is more common in Armenian songs), including several instances where tropes even occur in the first stanza. However, in Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs this frequency represents only the average, if not below that. In contrast, the frequency of tropes in Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs is definitely lower than his Armenian compositions, and therefore much more conventional, though the sorts of tropes there are as varied as in his Armenian songs. At the same time, one should note that exceptions exist to the above trend of increased usage of tropes by sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian aşuls. The two other major Armenian aşuls after Sayat’-Nova, Šamč´i Melk´ō and K´iĉ´ik’-Nova, both from Tiflis, do not have numerous songs left in general, while, in their preserved works, love is much less important a theme overall, and in their works, the frequency of tropes drops to the level of the early Isfahani Armenian aşuls. Even for Łul Yovhannēs and Sayat’-Nova, though the frequency of tropes is increasing, it is hard to argue for a linear development from the earlier bards in Isfahan to the latter in Tiflis, since no proof exists of contact, exchange, or influence among Armenian aşuls in two cities in the eighteenth century, though it was all possible.
The same reasons behind the success of Sayat’-Nova’s tropes are applicable to most aspects of his songs, primarily his Armenian songs. As mentioned before the discussion on tropes, Sayat’-Nova applied every major rhetorical figure in his songs. If we look at Sayat’-Nova’s concrete usage of each figure in isolation, many appear rather common among sixteenth to eighteenth century bards, and no better than theirs, for example, the belle’s hair as fragrant as basil, or her eyebrow like a bow, her lips or tongue as sweet as sugar or honey, her breast like a pomegranate, her stature like a cypress, her face like the moon and sun, etc. In contrast, some of his unique tropes recur in a number of his songs, e.g. the image “treasure from the bottom of the sea”, which is unique to Sayat’-Nova among early modern bards, is repeated three times in his Armenian songs:

Antak covi mić’en hanac angin govhar is, goveli.  
(You are a priceless pearl taken from the bottomless sea, praiseworthy one.)

Antak covi mić’en hanac aknir unim lal u t’ila.  
(I have precious stones taken from the bottomless sea, ruby and gold.)

Covemen dus ēkac zara is, gozal.  
(You are mother-of-pearl that emanated from the sea, belle.)

87 Sayat’-Nova, Az. No. 78, line 3; Łul Yovhannēs, No. 3, line 12.
88 Arm. No. 21, line 5.
89 Arm. No. 4, line 4.
90 Arm. No. 10, line 19.
91 Arm. No. 13, line 16.
Meanwhile, conventional phrases like “I fell ill for love of you,” or “I became crazy for love of you” are repeated 8 times altogether in Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian songs. This blemish is even more apparent in his Azeri songs, where more phrases are repeated, like “I have much pain,” which is one of the reasons for their lower standard of perfection. But in general, Sayat’-Nova’s innovation in individual tropes and the frequency with which he applies all the figures surpass all other bards. This is how Sayat’-Nova forges his own flamboyant style.

Next, let us consider the categories of the belle’s beauty in Sayat’-Nova’s songs. Baxč`inyan has reached the conclusion that Sayat’-Nova’s belle is not only beautiful physically and dressed well in a static sense, but is also elegant in movement. As in one of his Armenian songs:

Ašxark`ĕn cov, dun meč`ĕn nav, man is gali, lang is anum.94

(Beyond the land is the sea, you are a boat in its midst; you are sailing.)

Moreover, if the reader pays more attention, it is observable in one of his Azeri songs that the belle is not only beautiful statically or elegant in moving, but also intellectually astute:

Gormadum san t`ak`i saresar alli,
Gizlin xialundan yanulam yanul.95

---

92 Armenian songs No. 5, 19, 20, 24 (crazy), 30, 39, 40 (crazy), 46.
93 “Dardum č’ox”, “Dardum č’oxdur”, or other variants, in Azeri songs No. 42, 74, 80, 85, 89.
94 Arm. No. 31, line 16.
95 Az. No. 67, lines 7-8.
(I have not seen anyone as extremely clever as you,  
From secret imagination of you I am burning, burning.)

But other bards were also innovative in their description, like Yart’un Ölli:

Mankut’enēd unes usum,  
Č’es ēnganel lam u lusum.96

(You have an education from your childhood,  
You have not fallen into grief and sorrow.)

Therefore, Sayat’-Nova participates along with other eighteenth century Armenian bards in expanding the sphere of what constituted beauty in their depictions of the belle. Such a new tendency seems concomitant with the development of Armenian communities in commercial centers like Venice, Amsterdam, Marseilles, St. Petersburg, Calcutta etc., in which the education of Armenian girls first became the concern of the community, the earliest discussion of girls’ schooling beginning in 1757.97 From such beginnings, reference to the belle’s intelligence or noble mind grows in popularity in Armenian bardic literature of the following century.98

In addition to the higher frequency of tropes, another aspect of the depiction of the belle in Armenian songs of the early modern period is the gradual inclusion of a more

extensive depiction belle’s physical attributes than was attempted by Turkic bards. As in the examples earlier this section, if in the early songs, the focus concentrated more on features of the belle’s head and bosom, by the mid-eighteenth century Armenian ašuƗs’ songs in Armenian and Armeno-Turkish alike, expanded coverage to the hand and waist. The most elaborate instance of this penchant was left not by Sayat`-Nova but Łul Yovhannēs, who in his song beginning Goveli hōsn u jamald “Your praiseworthy beauty”⁹⁹ included the fullest depiction of female beauty ever to appear in Early Modern bardic literature over the course of 66 lines.

In reviewing the great success of Sayat`-Nova’s Armenian songs, his rich experience, knowledge, and maturity in the art are often emphasized. The latter argument is based on the fact that most of his Armenian songs are dated, and all these derive from the years 1752 to 1759, before his final fall from the Georgian court, and therefore from his last period as an ašuƗ. But this sort of argument automatically poses the question of Sayat`-Nova’s Azeri songs. Most of the dated examples come from the same period. Hence, is it possible to establish that these late Azeri songs are better than the others, too? After reading both, it seems unlikely. Those dated Azeri songs from this period are not necessarily the most formally complex or most distinguished works in his Azeri corpus. However, that does not necessarily lead to a sharp disparity between the quality of his Armenian and Azeri works from this period, since the number of clearly dated Azeri songs is merely 24, proportionally much smaller than the 26 dated

Armenian songs from a total of 55 in the Davt`ar and Ioane’s manuscript.

As the conclusion of this chapter, the general structure and literary merits of Sayat`-Nova’s Armenian song have been set in comparison with other early modern bards’ works. The remaining issues and more detailed discussion will be dealt with in the next chapter, where the potential influence from elevated poetic traditions in the area will be examined.
Chapter 5

Sayat`-Nova, the sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian ašul tradition, and elite poetic traditions of the area

Section 1 Sayat`-Nova, the sixteenth to eighteenth century Armenian ašul tradition, and the Perso-Turkish elevated poetic tradition

Since the classical Turkish and Azeri poetic traditions are not always distinguishable from each other and both came under comprehensive and profound Persian influence, I shall treat these three traditions under one general title.

A. Possible impact from Classical Persian Literature

Cultural connections between the Armenians and Iranians have endured millennia. The development of pagan mythology in Armenia was enriched by successive strands of Zoroastrian origin.\(^1\) Similarly, the gusan bardic tradition emerged in both the Armenian and Iranian context under the Parthian dynasty.\(^2\) Dari Persian poetry established itself in the 10\(^{\text{th}}\) and 11\(^{\text{th}}\) centuries and assumed the status of the most accomplished elite poetic form from the Near East to Transoxiana and the Indian subcontinent. It shed its enduring influence on all the other poetic traditions in this vast area, firstly those bearing Islamicate cultures like Urdu, Azeri, Kurdish, and Turkish, and then secondarily those of neighboring Christian cultures like Armenian and Georgian. Thus, the eleventh-century Armenian scholar Grigor Magistros knew Persian

---


and had knowledge of episodes in the Iranian epic,\(^3\) while the Armenian poet Kostandin Erznkac`i of the turn of the fourteenth century employed a syllabicized variant of the mutaqarib prosody in one of his compositions.\(^4\) More significantly, the major sixteenth-century Armenian ecclesiastical and literary figure, Grigoris Aİt`amarc`i composed a number of macaronic poems in Armenian and Persian.\(^5\) Composing in Persian was also a capability shared by Sayat`-Nova and a number of other sixteenth to eighteenth century bards, who also include allusions from Persian poetry in their songs, as discussed in the last two sections of Chapter 3.\(^6\) As already revealed from examples in chapter 4, the major categories of tropes in bardic songs in


\(^4\) As quoted from Č`ugaszyan, 1963, p. 25, note 2.


\(^6\) As far as I know, such bards include Armenian Yart`un ŌƗli and Azeri Qurbani. However, Yart`un ŌƗli’s Persian songs were not published by Aram Eremean, whose 1930s publication on him is still the most comprehensive. Qurbani’s Persian song is a qıt’ə, originally meaning “fragment”, and later becoming a poetic form, published in his 1990 collection of works in Azeri transcription. Here I attach it with my tentative English translation:

**Mast**

\begin{verbatim}
Cang ba xud, sülh ba düşnən tərqiə dine mast,
Kafərə Mə′min həme yekrəng dər aine mast.

Əz dəme sərəde sabükmağzan zica key mərəvəm,
Tudeye əgoəra qühəre daməne təmkine mast.

Bəhə həftəndə do millət həq bəvəd dər kışə eşəq,
Hər ke in fəhməd nure didəye həqəbine mast.
\end{verbatim}

**Drunkenness**

War with oneself, peace with the enemy, that is the path of our religion,
Infidel and believer are the same in our rule.

When we leave the light-mindeds’ cold breath,
The dust of chances aggravates the outskirts of our continence.

The word of seventy-two peoples would be the god in the cult of love,
That whoever understands it is the light of our God-seeing eyes.)

Qəzənfar Kazımov ed., *Qurbani*, Bakı Universiteti Nasriyyatı, 1990, p. 191

208
various languages are identical to other traditions of lyric poetry in the region, including classical Persian poetry. In the remainder of this section we shall explore possible relations between classical Persian poetry and the bardic tradition in terms of motifs, and tropes, especially with regard to Sayat’-Nova’s output.

The first theme that attracts our attention is the treatment of love in the classical Persian ghazal and ašuƗ songs. Meisami has concluded much about the norms that applied in lyric ghazals. Here only those of direct relevance for a comparison with ašuƗ songs will be reviewed. According to her, to a great extent, the classical Persian ghazal should be regarded as a courtly genre, in which:

the lovely youths addressed and extolled . . . should not be construed as literal participants in a factual love affair (or the poems as revelatory of the poet’s sexual proclivities) . . . they provide the occasion for the poet’s song and the pretext for his presentation of the various states of love. In ghazal . . . it is the portrayal of this experience that is central . . . the experience itself is both ideal and a fiction.7

A function of the ghazal is:

guiding the audience toward an understanding of the ideals of love and their transcendence of the realia of love’s actuality”8. “The primary focus of the ghazal is on the lover, equated . . . with the poet”, and always unfolded from an “ever-present ‘I’”. Yet “the ‘I’ to whom both love and song relate proves elusive; the song is not personal, the ‘I’ not flesh and blood”9. “The ‘I’ of the ghazal is presented as an idealized (and often fallible) participant in the kind of love affair to which his audience may be presumed to aspire”. “The convention of the takhallus points to the fact that the ‘I’ of the ghazal functions . . . as a deliberately constituted

persona--that of the poet-lover . . . that is that the poem is not to be interpreted autobiographically.\textsuperscript{10}

Therefore, the love story in a ghazal should be fundamentally regarded as a fiction:

Central to this fiction is the beloved’s superiority (in both physical and moral terms, physical beauty being but the outward mirror of the soul’s virtue) . . . Hyperbolic description abounds . . . Such expressions invoking the ‘religion of love’ should not be taken as proof that the love described is spiritual rather than physical; they exemplify the analogical habit of thought which sees the beloved’s place in the lover’s world as parallel to that of God for the believer, setting the beloved at the highest point of the lover’s universe.\textsuperscript{11}

Indeed, “although the refined and idealistic nature of love was certainly stressed, its physical aspect was by no means ignored.”\textsuperscript{12} However:

\begin{quote}
in the courtly ghazal, it is not the sex or even the ‘real’ status (human or transcendent) of the beloved that is of primary importance, but the qualities she\textsuperscript{13} embodies. The beloved (whether youth, man, or woman, slave or free, or God Himself) is accorded absolute supremacy in the love relationship because she is, by definition, the noblest of creation; . . . and while she may have many lovers without the taint of infidelity (for, after all, who could resist her?), the long-suffering lover is permitted only one beloved.

Separation is the lover’s natural state; and the vast majority of ghazals are love plaints addressed to the absent (or indifferent) beloved. For … it is the unattainability of the beloved, and his own consequent service without expectation of requital, that permits the lover to demonstrate his own value and his membership in the company of those ennobled by love.”\textsuperscript{14}
\end{quote}

\textsuperscript{10} Meisami, 1987, p. 262.
\textsuperscript{11} Meisami, 1987, pp. 254-255.
\textsuperscript{12} Meisami, 1987, p. 245.
\textsuperscript{13} “I use the feminine pronoun only for convenience”, as quoted from Meisami’s rendering (not in parentheses), Meisami, 1987, p. 254.
\textsuperscript{14} Meisami, 1987, p. 255.
The lover is one of the elite (or aristocracy) of love; he is also, paradoxically, love’s slave . . . While the beloved is frequently addressed as a ruler, love itself is often personified as a shah or sultan who holds sway over this aristocracy and who has numberless servants and vast armies under his command.\textsuperscript{15}

Nevertheless:

although the vassal of love may elect to serve without requital, secure in the knowledge that his love service provides proof of his innate virtue and nobility, such a renunciation of his rights does not absolve the beloved of obligation toward him. It is here, I think, that the depiction of idealized love by the Persian poets departs most significantly from that of their European counterparts: in the assumption that the beloved, however exalted, is still a partner in a relationship that confers both rights and obligations on each member. Love is a contract that binds both parties . . . the beloved has the obligation to conduct herself according to the protocols that govern such relationships; more specifically, it is the beloved who, precisely because of her exalted status, must observe in her conduct the principles of justice.\textsuperscript{16}

Still,

if the lover has no choice but to love and to serve, the beloved, by contrast, does have the choice between justice and injustice. And while the lover, in his self-sacrificing mode, may attribute his suffering to the turning sphere rather than to the beloved--who is, by definition, ‘all justice and equity’--her shortcomings are nevertheless noted.\textsuperscript{17}

The ghazal’s “language, imagery, and thematic content show little apparent development . . . during the centuries when it was at its peak.”\textsuperscript{18} Still it “is,

\textsuperscript{15} Meisami, 1987, p. 256.
\textsuperscript{16} Meisami, 1987, pp. 258-260.
\textsuperscript{17} Meisami, 1987, pp. 263-264.
\textsuperscript{18} Meisami, 1987, p. 240.
paradoxically, both highly conventional and highly flexible.” By “its primary generic topic—love—and by the wider implications of this topic,” for example, “by virtue of analogical imagery and structure,” the ghazal assumed manifold functions, [and] thus became applicable for varied occasions.

If the poet adds nothing new, that is, if he perceives no new meaning in his material, but merely produces a rhetorical elaboration of it, then he is, indeed, nothing but a slavish imitator. He not only must improve on his model rhetorically, but “make it new”, and make it distinctively his own.

Building on the conclusion arrived at in Chapter 3, the comparison between the norms of Persian ghazals and bardic love songs in the first person appears very fruitful. Early Modern bards mainly derived from an urban background and served primarily city residents. At the same time, they generally received less education than court poets and did not enjoy the high social status accorded the latter. The treatment of love in their songs is as conventional, if not more so, than court ghazals, with which they bear similarities, though at a lower level of sophistication. The plot always unfolds in the following manner: praise of the beloved’s physical beauty that arouses the bard’s yearning, which, in turn, provokes his suffering at being separated from her. The song then concludes with an appeal for her response. There is no suggestion that the beloved belongs to an elite class as in the ghazal, yet the she is still expected to respond as a matter of justice. However, the explicit or implicit homoeroticism of many elevated

---

ghazals\textsuperscript{22} is almost nonexistent in bardic counterparts. The overwhelming majority of early modern bards were male, and explicitly addressed the belle in their works as “girl”, and emphasized her femininity in extolling her physical attributes. Mystic notions like the love for God hardly ever appear in bardic love songs either, most of which express a purely secular relationship. Generally, bardic descriptions and tropes are also highly conventional, if not identical, as illustrated in Chapters 3 and 4. Therefore, granted their conventional form and meaning, little possibility is left for contemplating any non-fictional love story or allegorical meaning behind the text. Hence, overall, bardic love lyric may be regarded as a “simplified” version of Persian court poetry, though it is unclear what the precise connection is between them in view of the many possible intermediaries like the elevated Azeri, Ottoman, and Armenian lyric traditions.

Among bardic compositions, a divergence from the standard that places much of the emphasis on a description on the beloved’s physical beauty in preference for a description of the lover’s psychology, or other people’s amazement at the beloved’s beauty, as in the songs of Lul Yovhannēş and Yart’un Ölli, already constitutes a major innovation.\textsuperscript{23} Even Sayat’-Nova might not be regarded as of their caliber with regard to love norms, as his major innovations lie in other elsewhere, as discussed in Chapter 4. However, certain facets of his oeuvre, primarily his Armenian compositions, benefit from comparison with Sa’di’s love ghazals, both often being regarded as the paramount examples in their respective spheres.

\textsuperscript{22} Meisami, 1987, pp 245-252, 254, \textit{passim}.
\textsuperscript{23} Lul Yovhannēş has four such songs, for which, see Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 170-174. On the two composed by Yart’un Ölli, see Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 218-219, 221-222.
The first parallel worthy of investigation is the claim advanced by some scholars that behind their songs lie true love stories. From Gēorg Asatur on, it has been conjectured in Sayat’-Nova’s case and later developed by later Armenian scholars’ in decoding the identity of the beloved in a number of the bard’s songs, of which the most complicated is Yis Kanč‘um im lalanin “I cry for my ‘Lalanin’” or simply “I call my ‘Lalanin’.”24 In their estimation, the figure referred to is the Georgian princess Anna Batonišvili, King Erekle II’s sister.25 If in Sa’di’s case there is less agreement that some of his love ghazals are based on his authentic experience of love, the question has at least been raised by certain scholars.26 In support of their argument regarding Sayat Nova, scholars like Paruyr Sevak, Henrik Baxč‘inyan, and Charles Dowsett have observed the unique quality of sincerity in certain of his love songs, while for Sa’di, Ali Dashti comments:

When we read the ghazals by Sa’di, not only we see a capable, skillful poet but we have before us a person who has loved someone, has suffered with disappointments, and has been entranced by beauty in its purest sense . . . It would be impossible for the art of composition alone to bring about all these poems, dreams, complaints, rapture, and

25 As quoted from Baxč‘inyan, 1988, pp. 298-304. Major arguments for this opinion include:
   1. The rhyming words in the bayat’i stanzas of this song, lalani, yarani, zayani, merani, masani, all end in syllables ani, which is the dative form of the name Anna in Tiflis Armenian (Anna can be realized as Ana in Georgian and Tiflis Armenian). Therefore, all these superficially meaningless rhymes are compounds made up of attributes and the nuclear name Anna: to (attribute) Anna.
   2. The Armenian letter names mentioned in the third and fifth bayat’i stanzas: nu, ayb, se, ayb, might be explained as the acronym for Nova, Anna, Sayat’, Anna respectively as well. In this way, the two lines that bear two of these four letters can be explained as reflecting the separation of Sayat’-Nova and Anna.
   3. Three other songs, Armenian No. 57, Georgian No. 7 and 10, also contain phrases, which can be deciphered as containing the name Anna.
However, the claim of sincerity faces a number of problems. Only four of Sayat’-Nova’s songs, two Armenian and two Georgian, have been deciphered as inscribing the name Anna,\(^{28}\) while there are even less data for Sa’di’s ghazals. Moreover, as discussed above, the norm of love in both bardic songs and ghazals is highly stereotypical. For either a bard or a writer of ghazals, the appreciation of their love songs derives mainly from the way they express the love, as well as their presentation, i.e. the manner in which a work is performed, which is especially true for bards, rather than their direct expression of their individual experience of love in the real world, which is more significant in modern poetry. As consummate artists, Sayat’-Nova and Sa’di’s success was measured by innovative imagery and new ways of expression that would normally be the product of their skill and inventiveness. Moreover, it is arguable that some of Sayat’-Nova’s songs outside the group that has been decoded are artistically highly accomplished, thus accounting for their great popularity.\(^{29}\) Even less is sure for Sa’di. As a result, I would contend that if the quality of sincerity is to be predicated of Sayat’-Nova’s love songs, it should be interpreted in terms of his real love experience provided him the vigor for his writing, a likely example of which is his continuous compositions in the genre of musaddas in Armenian between 1758 and 1759 among other works. These musaddas, nine in total, all are about unrequited love, sung in the hang “tune” or

\(^{27}\) Dashti, 2002, pp. 304-305, and 2013, p. 228.

\(^{28}\) Baxč’inyan’s Armenian songs No. 43, 57 and Georgian songs No. 7, 10. See Baxč’inyan, 1988, pp. 298-304.

\(^{29}\) Like Baxč’inyan’s Armenian songs Nos. 16 “Ašxarumēs ax ē’m k’aši”, quoted already in Chapter 4, and 34 “K’ani vur Jan im”.

215
“mode” of the song starting with *Diba u engidunya* “Brocade and New World (clothes),” some with many literary innovations beyond the conventional.\(^{30}\) The passion that erupted in these works in the same mode may be identified with the vigor that animated his love songs, which may have been engendered by real experience. Nevertheless, we should not assume that the actual contents of the works were drawn from his biography. Nor does such a vigor assure the inventiveness either. Indeed, Sayat’-Nova’s songs on topics other than love, like the ode to his kamancha,\(^{31}\) his petition to King Erekle II,\(^{32}\) and the lament on his ill-starred fate,\(^{33}\) may be sincerer than his love songs as a category, since these rather uncommon themes do not labor under the same stereotypical generic requirements.

Scholars have similarly raised the issue of the possible influence of mysticism on the works of Sayat’-Nova and Sa’di. However, apart from a few Turkish aşıks like Gevheri and Ömer whose affiliation with Sufi orders is verifiable, it is difficult to establish that a certain bard composed mystical songs, though, as a very influential trend in both spirituality and literature from the Middle Ages on, one might expect that mysticism would have exerted an influence on some of them. In that regard, it is interesting that Baxč’inyan identifies the self-denial motif in Sayat’-Nova’s works, i.e. the sublimity of the beloved and the unworthiness of the lover, as common to mystical

---

\(^{30}\) Baxč’inyan’s Armenian songs Nos. 23-31. See also Dowsett, 1997, pp. 149-172, 286-287. Dowsett notes that Sayat’-Nova’s total eleven songs from 1758-1759 were sung to the same “tune or mode” (Dowsett, 1997, p. 286) suggesting a lack of musical inventiveness that might have contributed to his fall from court favor. But, as T’ahmizyan’s argument indicates, as cited in Chapter 4, the word *hang* can mean “mode” rather than “tune”, “melody”, thus indicating the commonality exists at a higher level of invention.

\(^{31}\) Baxč’inyan’s Armenian Song No. 42.

\(^{32}\) Baxč’inyan’s Armenian Song No. 37.

\(^{33}\) Baxč’inyan’s Armenian Song No. 41.
literatures, Armenian and Sufi alike. However, as stated at the end of Chapter 3, the influence of Islamic ideas on Sayat’-Nova as a whole is very peripheral.

In this regard, comments by Homa Katouzian on Sa’di’s ghazals may be appropriate:

In other words, the language and passion of mystic poetry is likely to have influenced the language of love. Some have gone further and claimed that the expression of human love itself is everywhere a worldly form of expressing desire for the mystical beloved, or that the beloved in what looks like human love simply acts as a symbol for the mystic object of loving. This seems unlikely, and is mere speculation.

Let us now pursue our comparison of Sayat’-Nova and Sa’di into the realm of poetic themes and figures of speech. As is common to both poetic forms, Sayat’-Nova’s ašuƗ songs and Sa’di’s ghazals are replete with descriptions of the beloved's physical beauty, the praise of the beloved, the self-effacing lover, and the latter’s suffering of separation from the beloved. However, Sayat’-Nova never talks about the joy of union with the beloved as Sa’di does. As Baxč`inyan has concluded, Sayat’-Nova’s love is definitely unrequited. Nor does the bard ever talk about the conflict between love and reason, or that between the lover and beloved as Sa’di does either. Regarding figures of speech, Sayat’-Nova would never use terms with a negative connotation to describe his beloved, in contrast to Sa’di, who frequently attributes fetneh “sedition, revolt”

38 In IJMES transcription: fitnah.
to the beloved and the consequences of her actions. Similarly, the bard never uses irony to describe his beloved. Indeed, the description of the two sorts of conflicts, or the usage of irony in Early Modern bardic works is rarely seen at all. Rather, these phenomena are suggestive of the simpler, less sophisticated ambience of bardic songs in contrast to that of the elevated Persian and, to a lesser degree, Azerbaijani poetic traditions.

The final issue to be discussed in this section is the possible impact of the so-called “Indian style”. Ali Dashti comments:

Most poets of Sa’di’s era, obsessed with the novelty of concepts in their lyrical poems, especially those attempting to praise the physical beauty of the beloved, have gone to exorbitant lengths and have achieved results, which are variously, grotesque, bizarre, and at time perverse.

One of his examples is, “Some have even likened the locks in the beloved’s hair to such things as a scorpion’s tail or a slithering snake”. Such innovations are typical of the “Indian style” of poetry that not only flourished in Iranian Persian poetry, but also in Persian, Urdu, or Turkish poetry in the Ottoman Empire and Indian subcontinent. According to Dashti, “Sa’di’s tendency is toward simplicity and natural flow,” and therefore he does not fall into this trap. Similarly, it is difficult to find

commonality between Sayat’-Nova’s tropes and those of the “Indian style” either. As analysed in Chapter 4, Sayat’-Nova’s tropes are innovative in comparison with most bards. However, he hardly invents anything “grotesque, bizarre or perverse”, but discovers new objects for comparison, most of which fall within a pre-existing category, yet hardly used by anyone before him. Therefore, the overwhelming majority of the categories of tropes in early modern bardic songs remain fairly conventional, pointing to a major dichotomy between court circles in Constantinople in the Ottoman sphere, and Isfahan in Iran and the bardic tradition and ambience.

B. Possible impact from Classical Azeri Literature

Classical Azeri literature in essence is a cognate of Ottoman divan literature under even more influence from classical Persian literature. Shah Ismail I, founder of the Safavid dynasty, was himself one of the most celebrated Azerbaijani poets under his penname Khaṭā’ī/Xətai. From Xətai on, traditional Turkic syllabic meters were not so underrated in classical Azeri poetry as in the divan tradition. At least two major Azerbaijani poets of the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries, Xətai43 and Molla Pənah Vaqif,44 left a considerable volume of works in syllabic meters. Of those three, Molla Pənah Vaqif was a contemporary of Sayat’-Nova, and his complete works were overwhelmingly written in syllabic meters. Moreover, Sayat’-Nova’s knowledge of

43 For a very brief account of his poetry, see Ahmet Caferoğlu’s part in Philologiae Turcicae Fundamenta, vol. II, pp. 643–644. There is a full chapter on him in Azərbaycan SSR Elmlər Akademiyası el.: Azərbaycan ədəbiyyatı tarixi, cəld. 1. Ən qədim dövrən XVIII əsrin sonuna qodır, Azərbaycan SSR Elmlər Akademiyası Naşriyyatı, Baku, 1960, pp. 324–339; with several pages on his poetic accomplishment (pp. 328–336), but only three on his love poems (pp. 332–335).
Xətaï is evident from his copying of one the latter’s couplets after his Azeri song No. 3 in the Davt`ar. Beyond this, however, there is no clear indication of influence of Xətaï or Vaqif on Sayat`-Nova. Moreover, the attempt to pinpoint any definite influence of either’s Azeri works on Sayat`-Nova is problematized by the former’s debt both to the elevated Persian influence and the traditional syllabic meters that originate in Turkic folklore, both of which are inherited in parallel by the bards.

C. Possible impact from Ottoman divan literature

Even among the Turkic bards of the Early Modern period, only a few like Aşık Ömer, Gevheri, and Kâtibî are under the profound influence of divan literature, which is attested by their elevated language, the preponderance of ‘arûd meters in Gevheri’s works, and their almost random use of Persian phrases, Persian grammatical structures (an overdose of the ızafe construction), and a very free word order, all of which are significantly rarer, if not completely absent from other Turkic bards’ works, but very typical of divan poetry. All the other early modern Turkish aşıks in the Ottoman domain wrote in the language of everyday speech rather than this highly “Persianized” Ottoman literary language. Clearly, Aşık Ömer’s family origin and higher education and Gevheri’s Sufi identity explain their use of such elevated forms, as mentioned in the

---

45 The couplet, according to the transcription given in the endnote to this song in Baxč`inyan, 1987, reads:

Dilbarun angina geymiş şol đeblumu susani,
Geç`ma namard k`orp`isina, Ɨoy ap`arson su sani.

(The belle put on lily-colored clothes,
Don’t cross the inhumane bridge! Let water take you!)

However, the purpose of quoting it here is unclear. See Baxč`inyan, 1987, p. 480. Çaferoğlu also counts Sayat`-Nova a follower of Vaqif (Philologiae Turcicae Fundamenta, vol. II, p. 652), but without supporting argument.
notes to their biographies in Chapter 2. After all, Sufi mystical connotations permeated
divan poetry as well, while most of the founders of Sufi orders popular in the Ottoman
Empire were from Persian-speaking areas, like Mevlana Rumi and Hacı Bektaş, and
the former’s most important works were all written in Persian.

It is particularly noteworthy that the styles of Aşık Ömer and Gevheri are very
similar to the Turkish works by ethnic Armenian aşuƗs affiliated to Bektashism. They
share the same high frequency of vocabulary and images, with a large interspersing of
Persian words and structures, and presumably composed for the same purpose, to
express the authors’ religious emotions. Since all they were all Sufi adherents, it is very
understandable that their understanding of and emotional perspective on those tenets
share much in common. By way of illustration I cite examples from the divans of
Gevheri and Seyyahi, an Armenian probably from the seventeenth century who joined
the Bektaşı order.46

Gevheri’s:

Híc-r-i ruhsârnla âteşler bıraktûn cânûnma,
Dağlar yaktûn sitemle süne-i uryâûnûm,
Hâsûli kûr eyledi aşûn dîl-i süzânûm,
Vechi var yansam yakûlsam âşk ile sultânûm.

Dûstû hasrtele dîl-i âvâremiz sahrâlûm,
Seyl-i aşûn âlemi gark eyledi sahrâlûm,
Va’d-
Vechi var yansam yakûlsam âşk ile sultânûm.

Bir harâret var ki dîlde idemem şerh û beyan,

Her nefes çarhu siyah etmektedir âh ü figan,
El-aman dostum şecer- âså tutuştum el-aman,
Vechi var yansam yakılsam aşk ile sultânıma.

Hayli demdir arz-ı ruhsar itmedin ey serv- kad,
Gevherî zâr ider beni bu cevr tâ-ebed,
Tesliye-i hâtir ıyele tâkat yok sabre meded,
Vechi var yansam yakılsam aşk ile sultânıma.\(^{47}\)

(Your departure with your soul left fevers for my soul,
Unjustly you burned the mountains of my bare bosom,
Love of you harvested my burning heart,
If I burn with love for my sultan, it is deserved.

With craving our errant hearts fell to deserts,
The deluge of love for you drowned the world in deserts,
The promise of reunion with you releases me for tomorrows,
If I burn with love for my sultan, it is deserved.

There is a fervor that I cannot foil in my heart with explanation or declaration,
Every breath is making the world sad, sighing and shouting,
Alas, my friend, I burned the scepter, alas!
If I burn with love for my sultan, it is deserved.

For a long time you haven’t honored your soul,\(^{48}\) oh the cypress-statured one,
Gevherî is moaning for this eternal torment on me,
Console the mind! There is no patience which helps to forbear,
If I burn with love for my sultan, it is deserved.)

Seyyahi’s:

Bir kadeh núş eleyüp sen ey peri pervaz ile,
Ser koyup meydân-ı aşka, raks ederler saz ile,
Şimdiden öldürmedik aşık komadın naz ile,
Korkarım, bir gamzesi cellât olursun akibet!

Cilvegâh ettin cemalin gülsenin ayn-i gurap,
Bağ-ı hüsnün gülseninde, menzilim oldu turap,


\(^{48}\) I.e. have not shown up.
Dahi taze tıfl iken, ettin gönül şehrin harap,
Gün gelir, bir zalim ve bidât olursun akibet!

Der Seyyahî, hun-i didem akmadadır dembedem,
Deldi bağrimp kâh hasret, kâh firkat, kâh gam,
Bana cefa ettiğin, bilmem diyem? ey gonce fem!
Öğredir çarh-ı felek, üstat olursun akibet! ⁴⁹

(Filling a cup with nectar, ⁵⁰ hey, fairy, you are fleeing (by drinking),
Putting their head in the arena of love, they dance according to the saz,
Even now you haven’t left a lover alive with your coquetry.
I fear that one of your dimples will be the executioner, fate!

You showed your face your rose garden [that is] your raven-like eyes,
In your beautiful rose garden, my habitation became hubris (in comparison),
When you were still a child, you destroyed the city of your heart,
One day you will become an unjust tyrant, fate!

Say, Seyyyahi, blood is flowing every moment from my eyes,
It pierced my bosom, either craving, or separation, or regret.
Shall I say that I don’t know your torment against me? Hey, bulb-mouthed One!
The wheel of fate teaches, you will be the master, fate!)

It is apparent that the setting of the beloved’s departure and the agony it causes are
shared by both. The much free word order and frequent usage of Persian words, set-
phrases and ezafe construction are also features the two hold in common. According to
published sources, Seyyyahi’s songs were written in the Arabic script for Ottoman
Turkish. As such, their language and style are distinctly different from the Armeno-
Turkish songs analyzed in Chapter 4, in which the native Turkish word order (subject-
object-verb, attributes before the attributed, etc.) is largely observed. Thus, while
Persian words occur frequently, the use of the Persian ezafe construction is limited to

⁵⁰ Or “drinking a cup”, since nuş eylemek can mean either “to fill with nectar” or simply “to drink”.

223
set-phrases in most cases. Apart from language and formal issues, since divan literature itself is under heavy Persian influence, it is quite difficult to distinguish from which tradition a certain motif or style may have been borrowed by the bardic tradition. All these rhetorical or stylistic issues have been discussed in reviewing Persian influence.

Section 2 Sayat’-Nova, the Armenian ašuƗ tradition of the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries, and the medieval Armenian lyric tradition (taļasac`ut`iwn)

Taļ is a very general name given to the standard type of medieval Armenian lyrical poem written in isosyllabic prosodies developed from the seventh century. The poet composing a taļ is called a taļasac`, and the poetry taļasac`ut`iwn. According to Varag Nersisyan, taļ is not a genre with a strict definition of its form and content. In contrast, any lyrical work composed in a certain rhythmic form can be called a taļ in medieval Armenian literature.51 Rhyme was a much older feature of the Armenian oral tradition which became a fixed characteristic of literate poetry from the works of Grigor Magistros in the eleventh century on the basis of Arabic influence, while later the impact of Turkic folk meters is discernible. Taļ composition was fairly consistent until the early nineteenth century, and hence was actively pursued during Sayat’-Nova’s lifetime. Having received an Armenian education, Sayat’-Nova and other Early Modern Armenian ašuƗs could not be unfamiliar with the taļasac`ut`iwn tradition. Before

---

Sayat’-Nova, ašuƗ Yart’un Öli of Č’arbaƗ in central Iran even has a song in eight-syllable quatrains written in classical Armenian, which is very similar formally to the taƗ.52

Aspects of bardic prosody, rhyme scheme, and figures of speech have been treated in previous chapters. One finding from that discussion relates to the length of some Armenian ašuƗs’ love songs. The norm for brdic love songs in Turkic and Armenian is four stanzas, however certain exponents like Yart’un Öli and Sayat’-Nova regularly employ five. Granted that taƗs often exceed twenty lines and are therefore longer than Turkic folk songs consisting of three to four four-line verses and Persian ghazals, and bearing in mind that both Yart’un Öli and Sayat’-Nova had an educational background in Armenian, one factor behind their longer verse structure may be the influence from the taƗasac`ut`iwn. Similarly, as lines in taƗ poems often extend to fifteen or sixteen syllables, this may also be a factor in Sayat’-Nova’s preference for this type of line in contrast to bardic norms.

Based on Nersisyan’s conclusion, other scholars’ opinions, and my own reading, the major themes of taƗasac`ut`iwn are:53

Panegyric (govest)

Paraenesis (xrat)

Elegy (oƗb)

Vituperation (parsav)

52 Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 244-245.
53 Largely based on Nersisyan and Baxč`inyan, 1984, p.203.
Entreaty (afersank`)

Complaint (gangat)

Homelessness (antuni) or economic emigration (pandxtut`iwn)

Secular feast or celebration (uraxut`iwn mardkanc`)

From the listing of the major themes in the bardic tradition in Chapter 3 it is obvious that all these feature in the Armenian ašuƗ tradition as well. However, except for the typically Armenian theme of the antuni or pandxtut`iwn, thematic parallels alone do not necessarily establish a definite interconnection or link. Consequently, we must pursue our examination at the level of more specific detail.

Nersisyan and other scholars have concluded three major topics under praise: religious, praise of celebrated figures, and praise of female beauty. The first two are very uncommon in Armenian ašuƗ songs. I have encountered only one example of the second type, Šamc`i Melk`ō`s Ov srhazan Yosep` minj kat`ulikus (“Oh Most Reverend Joseph our Catholicos”). Meanwhile, Sayat`-Nova composed a song in praise of a church, the Surb Geōrg church of MuƗni. Nevertheless, though the theme is religious, the bard’s treatment focuses on the magnificence of the architecture of the shrine without any biblical or theological reference. Such eulogies are also attested in certain Early Modern tales like that of Vardan of Caffa (Vardan Kafac`i, 1615-1712) on the Monastery of the Holy Cross in the Crimea and a tal Nersēs Mokac`i (c.1575-1625) in praise of the founders of the Mec Anapat Monastery that includes a description of its

54 Based on Nersisyan and Baxč`inyan, 1984, pp. 206-223.
56 Arm. song No. 56.
57 Hasmik Sahakyan, Uş mijnadari hay banastefcut`yunê (XVI-XVII dd.), Haykakan SSH GA
architecture. Thus, a precedent existed for this sort of work in the taƗ tradition. At the same time, I have not encountered any parallel to Sayat’-Nova’s song in praise of architecture among other Early Modern bards.

Meanwhile, praise of female beauty represents the most popular theme of secular ašuƗ songs. Thus, while Sayat’-Nova’s ardent, sober, yet definitely melancholy style is rarely attested among panegyric taƗs, since such melancholy belongs more directly to the genre of complaint, affinities exist between taƗs and ašuƗ songs on this theme. In particular, the more detailed description of the physical attributes of female beauty alluded to several times above, not only by Sayat’-Nova but Łul Yovhannēs at least58, which is much more comprehensive than in Turkic bardic songs, encompassing questions of the belle’s grace of movement and good nature may have originated under the influence of taƗasac`ut`iwn, since they already feature in compositions of the 10th century by figures like Grigor Narekac`I, in whose Tal ekelec``woy (Poem on the Church) the panegyric of female beauty is employed as a trope for the Church.59

In contrast to love, other subjects are much less attested in bardic songs from the Early Modern period. Among Armenian ašuƗs, the theme of moral paraenesis occupies second place in frequency after love. With regard to format, most taƗs and ašuƗ songs are similar to each other, since they are written either in the first person, is which the poet engages

---

58 His long work, starting with the line Goveli hōsn u ǰamald “Your commendable beauty” (Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 167-169), includes almost all the physical attributes commented upon in praise of female beauty.

the audience in a dialogue, or in the third person, in which case the writer includes a self-reference only in the takhalluş in the last stanza does the taƗasac` or ašuƗ refer to himself. However, in two of Sayat`-Nova’s Armenian songs (Nos. 36 and 43), the poet speaks directly to himself (one to the “heart” and the other calling himself by his professional name). As for his Azeri songs, in contrast, their style, including vocabulary, do not differ much from Turkic bardic songs of the same category, except for the “xat`ayi” songs, whose genre invariably requires a praise of Shah Ismail Safavi Khatā’ī.

Though listed by Nersisyan as the last major theme in taƗs, the genre of complaint nevertheless occupies significant space in both taƗasac`ut`iwn and the bardic tradition, especially as it incorporates the lover’s complaint to the beloved, either for her departure or her unavailability. Outside that, one of the two other major topics in taƗs under this theme, the penitential lament about one’s shortcomings is perhaps not attested in ašuƗ songs. Nevertheless, the Isfahani ašuƗ Łul Yovhannēs has a song lamenting an unfortunate marriage.61

The last major topic of lament, social injustice and inequality, is attested from Sayat`-Nova’s famous Ašxarumēs mē p’anjara ē (“My world is a prison”), Łul Ėgaz’s Č`ka dard imac`oƗ (“There is none who knows pain”),62 and Azeri aşiq Abbas Tufarğanlı’s Bəyənməz (“Unlovable”),63 though it is not very widespread among bards.

In Ašxarumēs mē p’anjara ē, composed towards the end of his career as a court poet,

60 The takhallus becomes increasingly popular in tafs from the 13th century, as witnessed by Frik, Yovhannēs T’lkurac`I, and Kostandin Erznkac`i.
62 Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 77-79.
63 Abbas Tufarğanlı, 72 seʾr, p. 9.
Sayat’-Nova is sober yet very depressed, due to his deep desperation. The emotion and adept usage of figures of speech in this song is unique among all the complaints of the Early Modern period. Another secondary aspect of the genre is Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs lamenting the ephemerality of this world, a topic attested in other Azeri aşıqs’ works, while in Armenian songs, not even Sayat’-Nova, but only Łul Yovhanneş bemoans the transience of this world.

Nersisyan lists vituperation as next to eulogy in importance, but, based my reading, does not appear to have a high profile in either taƗasac`ut`ıwn or the bardic tradition, judging by numbers alone, as also admitted by Nersisyan. In both ta and asu compositions, some handlings of this theme involve satire, such as Martiros Łrimec’i’s vituperation on the priest Davit (Dawit’ Eric’u gorceal č’arik’n e) or some by NaƗaš Yovnaţ’an, while Šamč’i-Melk’o’s works are considered as pure satire. These include a song attacking a certain Aɾak’il from Tarawri, or his neighbor Xaraz Ali, a fraudulent artisan who defrauded Melk’o of some money. However, while Sayat’-Nova may reject injustice, as in Ašxarumės mē panjara ē, or a certain person, such as

---

64 Azeri songs No. 97, No. 101, and No. 107.
69 Nersisyan and Baxč’inyan, 1984, p. 230 and Sahakyan, 1961, p. 60. Since in Nersisyan, the single author of this chapter’s list of NaƗaš Yovnaţ’an’s blames and Sahakyan’s list of his satirical songs, there are overlapping titles like Govasanut’ıwn Erewanay k’alak in “Ode to the city of Yerevan” (Asatur Mnac’akanyan, Şuşanik Nazaryan, ed., NaƗaš Hovnaţ’an: banastefcut’yunner, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1951, pp. 99-100) and Otanawor I veray Şahvertunc’ Tēr Abrahamin “Verse on Fr. Abraham of Şahverti” (Mnac’akanyan and Nazaryan, 1951, pp. 111-115). At least these two should be regarded belonging to the vituperative-satirical genre.
71 Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 271-274, with a variant.
72 Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 281-282, 303.
Georgian Catholicos Antoni I who is addressed in the poet’s only song of this kind.\textsuperscript{73} Vituperation is not a common theme in early modern Turkic aşık/aşıq composition either. From the period under examination, I have observed only a few vituperative songs, e.g., one by Azeri aşıq Qurbani against a certain unnamed vizier,\textsuperscript{74} which borders on the genre of curse, and aşıq Valəh’s \textit{Mollalar} (The Mullahs),\textsuperscript{75} which is more satirical.

The four remaining major themes are even rarer overall, if we discount the motif of entreating the beloved, which is a cliché of compositions on love. Nevertheless, though virtually non-existent in works of Turkic bards’, elegies on disasters befalling cities or regions after battle or earthquake represent an extensive tradition in Armenian taşasçı’ut’ıwn and are periodically attested in the works of Armenian aşıl work, suggesting a continuity in the tradition. Examples include the Isfahani aşıl Baler Ölli’s songs on the fate of New Julfa after the fall of the Safavids\textsuperscript{76} and Safar Ölli’s song about an earthquake that damaged Yerevan in 1679.\textsuperscript{77} Although Sayat’-Nova has left no elegy, he is the only aşıl from that period who composed in the genre of entreaty, i.e. his famous \textit{Dun ēn glxēn imastun is} “Thou art profoundly wise.”

Of the minor themes in taşasçı’ut’ıwn Nersisyan topics such as exegesis (meknabanut’ıwn) and curse (aneck’) are not attested from aşıl works, while history (patmut’ıwn) is represented by aşıls, since elegies on events are naturally encompassed

\textsuperscript{73} Georgian song No. 29.
\textsuperscript{74} Qurbani, Kazimov, 1990, p. 49.
\textsuperscript{75} Axundov, Sakaoglu et al. 1985, p. 74.
\textsuperscript{76} Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 104-115.
\textsuperscript{77} Sahakyan, 1961, pp. 355-356.
within it, while some bards possess songs on their personal experience as, for example, Isfahan ašuƗ Ľul Arzuni’s XaƗ i veray Kalkat’ay “Song on Kolkata,”\(^\text{78}\) though these topics were not treated by Sayat’-Nova. Meanwhile, as indicated above, the topic of homelessness (antuni) and economic emigration (pandxtut`iwn), though largely absent in Turkic bardic literature, is widely represented in both Armenian taƗasac’ut`iwn and ašuƗ songs, again suggesting interaction between those two literary strata.

The final issue under discussion in this section is the employment of allegory in Early Modern taƗasac’ut`iwn and the ašuƗ tradition, particularly in the works of Sayat’-Nova. In this regard, the most important motif is undoubtedly the rose and nightingale. As discussed in previous chapters, this motif entered the taƗasac’ut`iwn tradition from Persian poetry in the thirteenth century and grew in popularity with poets over the next two or three centuries, during which it developed a series of Armenian Christian variants.\(^\text{79}\) In subsequent centuries, i.e. the Early Modern period, it was still quite popular in the tafasac’ut’iwn tradition, but as its heyday had passed, no further innovations were forthcoming.

The motif is also popular among ašuƗs as well, yet with a much less sophisticated application. In addition, the bards employed it merely as a vehicle for secular love song, with fewer mystic connotations than in either the Sufi or elevated Christian literary traditions. Thus, a number of Early Modern bards handle the motif in its most basic forms either as a dialogue between the rose (beloved) and the nightingale (lover) or a

\(^\text{79}\) Nersissyan and Baxč`inyan, 1984, pp. 248-250.
description of the nightingale’s loss of, and/or yearning, and/or searching for the rose. The latter is exemplified by K`ič`ik`-Nova’s two songs in a tone of grief and unrequited love,\textsuperscript{80} while the former type is attested by Sayat’-Nova’s song from Ioane’s manuscript,\textsuperscript{81} in which the motif is employed as an allegory for the “I” in the last stanza. Meanwhile, in the Davt`ar, there is an address from the “I” who lost his love to the nightingale who, in parallel, has lost its rose,\textsuperscript{82} expressing “my” frustration by comparing the two lovers’ situation. In contrast, Sayat’-Nova’s only Azeri song in the Davt`ar composed fully on the rose and nightingale motif seems incomplete, with only two stanzas.\textsuperscript{83} Many other ašuƗs of this period merely alluded to the motif in single tropes in their love songs. Granted the widespread and enduring employment of the motif in Armenian taƗasac`ut`iwn, it is possible that it acted as an intermediary for the development of the motif in ašuł songs beyond the matrix provided by the bardic tradition.

Another very popular motif in Sufi allegorical songs is the moth (or butterfly) and flame (or candle, light), particularly in symbolizing the concept of self-annihilation in the uniting completely with the divine beloved. Yet, as this procedure contravenes the Judeo-Christian tradition, the motif was never integrated into Armenian Christian didactic literature. Similarly, though Sayat’-Nova used the image of butterfly and candle at least in Azeri songs Nos. 7, 17, 24, 33, 46, 60, 85, 90, 102 and 102 as a trope for fervent secular love, he never used it in his Armenian songs. Moreover, in the oeuvre

\textsuperscript{80} Sahakyan, 1961, pp.319-321.
\textsuperscript{81} Armenian songs, appendix A, No. 5 (52 by accumulation).
\textsuperscript{82} Armenian song No. 7.
\textsuperscript{83} Azeri song No. 109, or No. 1 in Baxç`inyan’s Appendix A, with endnote on p. 498.
of other Early Modern Armenian ašuls the motif is not present even as a trope.

By way of preliminary conclusions we may note that in certain formal issues such as line length and number of stanzas, as well as at the level of themes such as elegy and the plight of the economic migrant, the Armenian elevated poetic tradition may be a factor in impacting ašul composition. Similarly, it may have served as the intermediary in transmitting other themes such as the rose and nightingale that originated from a Persian matrix. Judging from Yart’un Öili’s competence in Classical Armenian and the number of songs featuring a debate motif, it might be argued that he stands even closer to the tañasac`ut`ıwn tradition than Sayat’-Nova, since he also composed in quite sound classical Armenian. In contrast, even in his days of exile as a clerk, writing colophons in Classical Armenian, Sayat’-Nova still made spelling mistakes.  

Section 3 Sayat’-Nova, the Armenian ašul tradition of the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries, and the medieval Georgian lyric tradition

In discussing the general features of Sayat’-Nova’s Georgian songs, I attempt to follow the structure already established in Chapter 3, Section 3 and Chapter 4, Section 2. However, the lack of other contemporary ašuls composing in Georgian renders any comparative treatment out of the question.

Overall, the ašul/ašik tradition is formally distant from the classical Georgian poetic tradition, in that it employs Turkic folk prosodies, distinct from medieval

---

Georgian prosodies such as the sixteen-syllable line șairi employed in romance.\textsuperscript{85} The only clear interaction between Georgian poetry and Armenian ašuƗ songs seems to be the genre muxammaz/muxambazi (five-line stanza). Georgian scholars agree that this form passed into Georgian literature by means of the Armenian majority population of the capital Tiflis, among whom it was popular. This is confirmed from chauvinist comments by the nineteenth-century aristocratic poet Vakhtang Orbeliani: “I do not like the muxambazi style—kinto style, bazaar style.”\textsuperscript{86} The remark identifies the form with the kintos (a sort of small trader) associated with the market.\textsuperscript{87}

After Davit` Guramišvili (1705-1792)\textsuperscript{88} and Sayat`-Nova, Besiki (born as Besarion Gabašvili, 1750-1791) was the last major poet writing in Georgian in the eighteenth century, succeeding Sayat`-Nova in serving at the Kartli-Kakheti court. In this connection, it is often argued that Besiki’s early style is under Sayat`-Nova’s influence.\textsuperscript{89} But the only parallel study of the two writers that I have encountered was conducted by Paruyr Muradyan. It contrasts their expulsion from Tiflis, provides a short comment on Besiki’s genres, and offers a brief selection of quotations from Sayat`-Nova’s and Besiki’s muxammaz/muxambazi compositions to illustrate generic and stylistic parallels between them.\textsuperscript{90} Muradyan argues that Besiki used six genres and

\textsuperscript{85} For this prosody, see Donald Rayfield: The literature of Georgia: a history, 3\textsuperscript{rd} revised edition, Garnett Press, London, 2010, pp. 91-92.
\textsuperscript{86} As quoted from Muradyan, 1963, p.40.
\textsuperscript{87} For reference to them, see Ioseb Grišašvili; H`ra`ya Bayramyan, Matin K`aramyan trans., Hin Tiflisi grakan Bohemë (Dzveli Tbilisi literaturuli bohema), Merani, Tbilisi, 1989, pp. 12-17.
\textsuperscript{88} Rayfield, 2010, pp. 128-133.
\textsuperscript{89} Rayfield, 2010, pp. 134-135.
\textsuperscript{90} Paruyr Muradyan, Sayat`-Novan .connector:alh`urneri: banasirakan prptumner ev nyu:t`er, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarak`e` ut`yun, Yerevan, 1963, pp. 38-42. However, there is no indication of Sayat Nova’s song numbers and original languages at all. I cannot find much similarity in these examples based on Muradyan’s Armenian translation either.)
prosodies already employed by Sayat´-Nova (bayat`i, Ɨap`ia, mustazad, t`axmis, muxambaz and t`eǰlis), among which the muxambaz, mustazad and bayat`i are further confirmed by the scholar Korneli Kekeliže. In the collection of Besiki’s works accessible to me, out of a total of sixty works, there are around fifteen featuring five-line stanzas, i.e., about a quarter. In comparison, that prosody accounts for 26 out of 68 of Sayat´-Nova’s Armenian songs and 14 out of his 38 Georgian songs. However, there are two other prosodic issues in Besiki’s songs that Muradyan did not refer to. The first is the use of fourteen-syllable line. According to scholars, this form of Georgian poetry did not start with Besiki, but became popular after him in the nineteenth century and nicknamed “Besikuri”, i.e., the Besikian form. Among Besiki’s poems, works in fourteen-syllable lines (four-, five- or six-line stanza) amount to 12, i.e. a fifth of the total. Meanwhile, according to Levonyan, the fourteen-syllable line is a form of muxammaz, while the fourteen-syllable 5-4-5 trimeter is standard for the 4-line stanza Ɨalandari, to which Besiki’s only fourteen-syllable four-line poem seems to conform. The second issue is eleven-syllable lines. According to Gac`erelia, this form was first introduced into Georgian poetry by Davit´ Guramišvili, but was systematically used by Sayat´-Nova and later by Besiki. In the collection, songs in four-

---

91 According to its name in Arabic, this is an extension of couplets into five-line stanzas.
92 This should be a T`eǰnis.
94 Since there might be fragment(s) and/or variant(s), this number is not accurate.
95 Sayat´-Nova’s numbers are based on Levonyan, p. 88.
96 All the conclusions here derive from email exchange with Georgian literary scholar Merab Ghaghanidze (August 27th and 29th 2015). He, in turn, partly paraphrased Akaki Gac`erelia’s K`art`uli klasikuri lekʻsi: maxvili, ritmi, rit`ma da strop`i, Sabčot`a Mcerali, Tbilisi, 1953, pp. 170-210.
97 4-line stanza only 1; 5-line stanza 8; 6-line stanza 3.
98 Levonyan, 1944, p. 56.
99 Levonyan, 1944, p. 58.
100 Besiki, 1962, p. 34.
line stanzas of eleven-syllable lines comprise 11 poems out of the 60, i.e. around a fifth of the total. Since this is the standard format of Iošma,\textsuperscript{101} it is highly probable that this form is also imported from aşuł literature. Prosodies aside, Besiki also use the figure of jinās,\textsuperscript{102} which might be assumed as a further influence from the aşuł tradition. Naturally, these initial findings require a more thorough investigation. Moreover, even if Besiki reveals the impact of the bardic tradition, this was not necessarily transmitted by means of his acquaintance with Sayat’-Nova’s works. When the latter was expelled from the Georgian court in 1759, Besiki was only an eight- or nine-year old boy. However, it is quite possible that he heard Sayat’-Nova’s songs in Tiflis or Telavi.

By way of general conclusion, we may state the following. Acknowledged as the most prestigious poetical tradition in Persianate countries in the medieval and Early Modern periods, Classical Persian poetry influenced almost every elevated and popular literary tradition in the area to a greater or lesser degree, including the aşık/aşuł/aşıq tradition. This influence on the bardic mainstream in Turkic could be direct, but especially indirect, mediated through classical Azeri and Ottoman Divan poetry. In addition to these elevated intermediaries, it is also important to consider the possible role of “pre-aşık/aşıq” Turkic poets like the thirteenth century figure Yunus Emre in the Near East before the aşık/aşıq tradition came into existence, some of whom had already accepted Persian influence as well. These links are suggested by certain core similarities

\textsuperscript{101} Levonyan, 1944, pp. 54-55.
\textsuperscript{102} Besiki, 1962, pp. 52-54.
witnessed between the above traditions and bardic composition, though much of the background to this hypothesis requires further, more in-depth investigation.

In addition to Persian influence via Turkic traditions, Christian Armenian bards were also open to its mediation through Armenian talasac`ut`iwn and, for those in Tiflis, perhaps even classical Georgian poetry. Furthermore, it is suggested that their compositions bear the impact of Classical Armenian poetry in regard to a number of characteristics where the latter diverges from both the elevated Persian and Turkic aşık/aşıq traditions.
Chapter 6

Sayat’-Nova’s Posthumous Status as a Cultural Icon

This concluding chapter treats the pattern of reception of Sayat’-Nova the poet and his works both in the academic and cultural sphere as well as manifestations of Sayat’-Nova’s more popular appeal to Armenians in the Republic of Armenia and worldwide Diaspora as well as to the Transcaucasian public. It will be argued that the trajectory of this reception mirrors important sociopolitical developments in the region’s history over the last three centuries.

Section 1 Romantic Nationalism: 1840s-1880s

The period between 1795, the likely year of Sayat’-Nova’s death in Tiflis\(^1\), and 1963, just before the two-hundred-and-fiftieth anniversary of his birth, a milestone massively celebrated across the Soviet Union, coincided with major political changes in Southern Caucasia. These nearly 170 years mark the first phase of the process, witnessing the renewal of interest in Sayat’-Nova and his poetic output and a rise in his public status that further peaked in the 1960s. The tradition of Sayat’-Nova studies started about half a century after the poet’s death and became more fully established

\(^{1}\) Axverdean reported that the bard had died in Tiflis in 1795 in his Sayeat’-Nōvay, pp. XII-XIII, on the basis of information by those who buried him, and this has been widely accepted in Armenology. However, a number of Kartvelologists list the date as 1801 or later according to the record in prince Ioane Bagrationi’s Kalmasoba, on which, see, for example, Alek’sandr Baramiže and Davit’ Gamezardašvili, Georgian literature, Tbilisi University Press, Tbilisi, 1968, p. 43, and Rayfield, 2010, p. 133. Dowsett’s refutation of the latter view is robust, though he does not give much support to 1795 either. See Dowsett, 1997, pp. 35-45.
by the early 1920s. Previously, most of the research stemmed from the efforts of
isolated individuals motivated by personal interest alone, as we shall observe in the
case of the turn of the century Armenian poet Hovhannes T`umanyan.

Sayat`-Nova studies begin with Gēorg Axverdean in the 1840s before the
introduction of a modern approach to scholarship in South Caucasia. At that time,
Sayat`-Nova’s songs were sung only in Tiflis, and were slowly falling into obscurity.
A talented aristocrat, Gēorg Axverdean received a proper Russian education at the
Tiflis Gymnasium before continuing his studies at the Lazarian Institute in Moscow
and subsequently Moscow University. He was among the first generation of
university-educated Armenian and South Caucasian intellectuals, who imbibed
modern science and scholarship and brought literary romanticism and romantic
nationalism to their homeland. Romantic nationalism venerates the folk and
emphasizes folk language and literature as the carriers of the nation's history and
soul.² Investigating Armenian dialects, collecting Armenian folk literature, employing
vernacular Armenian, or ašxarabar, as a vehicle for written literature like Xač`atur
Abovean, ³ he differed only in the means he used to realize those ideals. While
Abovean wrote the first modern novel, Wounds of Armenia, and his other works in the
dialect of his birthplace K`anak`eṙ, Axverdean set out to collect Armenian folklore
and ašul songs, which he transcribed in the Tiflis dialect, while maintaining a

³ For Axverdean’s education, see Gevorg Madoyan, Gevorg Axverdyan, Hayastan Hratarakč`ut`yun, Yerevan, 1969, pp. 8-11, for his view on language, see ibid., pp. 97-100, and, for his view on literature, see pp. 68-72. For Abovean’s view on both, see H. Muradyan’s chapter on him in: Hay nor grakanut`yan patmut`yun, vol. 1, Yerevan, 1962, pp. 411-415.
particular interest in the speech of Tarōn-Turuberan, the region west of Lake Van and home of St. Maštoc’, the inventor of Armenian alphabet. Axverdean published two volumes (the second, posthumously) of Armenian ašuƗ songs under the title 

*Gusank* 6 The latter tome presented a variety of materials, but his first volume was dedicated exclusively to Sayat’-Nova, the most productive and accomplished Tiflis Armenian ašuƗ. In the opening of his preface to the first printed collection of Sayat’-Nova’s works, Axverdean explains at length his motivation for gathering Armenian ašuƗ and popular songs:

Ku’li mē k’ani tari hawakum em kendani albiwric’ hanac kendani niwt’er žamanakakic’ Hay azgi patmut’e an hamar. Hawak’ēlis unēi mišt ač’k’i taks xndirn, t’ē dēsudēn ोtar azgeru mēj bnakac Hayern in’ē pēs ēn jewac’ rel iranc’ keank’n mnalov aylazgi azdec’ut’e an takn, u amēn tei heštu’eamb ver arnelov nranc’ sovorut’ iwnnern, erbenn lezun ēl yaytnum en ardeōk’ iranc’ kenc’afavarwt’ ēnum ēnpēs bun nšanner, ork’ goyac’nun ēlin azgi sep’akanut’ iwnn u šnorhk’n. Nayelov ēs džwaraluyc xndrun, orn or pahanjum ē ews tirōƗ azgeru bun azgaynut’ ēni čiśd telekanaln, law tesnum ēi or amēnič’ arāj k’nelun mēk žolovrdi xōsac lezun ē,…Ēs mtk’ov žolovum ēi hayerēn Aḵak, Ārak, VičakaxaƗ, or amēn tesak xaơer, manawand azgayin ergiç’ neru kam AšuƗneru ptuƗnern, orn or pahpanel ē azgn awēl pakas t’ē awandut’ ēnov, t’ē grov, oroy ē’’imanalēn šat zrkank’ e krel ołormuk Hayastann.8

(For a few years I have been collecting living materials from living sources for a contemporary history of the Armenian nation. While collecting, I had a question continually before my eyes as to how Armenians had given a distinct shape to their lives, granted that they lived all over among foreign nations under the influence of other peoples, everywhere adopting their customs and sometimes their language with ease. Do they reveal in their way of life such basic signs that

---

4 Roughly corresponding to the current Turkish Province of Muş, plus much of the Bitlis Province.  
7 For the details of his collection of the Davt’ar, its edition and publication, see Madoyan, 1969, pp. 72-89.  
8 Axverdean, 1852, preface, p. I.
manifest a nation’s individuality and aptitude? Considering such a difficult problem, which also requires precise information on the ruling nations’ basic national characteristics, I saw clearly that above all it is through examining a people’s spoken language. … With this in mind, I was collecting Armenian fables, proverbs, fortune telling, and all kinds of songs, especially the products of national singers or ašuƗs, which have saved the nation more or less through oral tradition or writing, from the ignorance of which lamentable Armenia has borne much deprivation.)

Throughout the work he rejects the idea that Armenians lack a poetic sense expressed in versified or lively songs. To counter the accusation he naturally introduces Sayat’-Nova. As he noted in the preface, when talking about Sayat’-Nova, older people left the following compassionate comment:

K`ani angam kardalis sra xaƗern hariwr tarekan paɾawneru aɾjewn, uzelov hrapurac sranc` t`mrac yišolut`iwnn durekan hnuc` banerov, hanem nranc`ic` mē teƗekut`iwn mer ergĉ`i vra, mišt lsel em cngan talov asac xosk`ern, “Ēt xō mir Sayeat`-Novu xaƗn ē, vay k`i Sayeat`-Nova, inc` zoƗir is šanc` tēwi.”

(Declaiming his songs a few times before hundred-year old grannies, hoping to stir their faded memory with lovable old things so as to elicit from them information about our singer, I have always heard these words said kneeling, “This is indeed our Sayat’-Nova’s song. Alas for you, Sayat’-Nova, how much effort you gave to the dogs!”)

Axverdean’s contribution to Armenian folk literature studies should not be underestimated, and his status as the first scholar of Sayat’-Nova is undeniable. Yet in his time, when modern scholarship still struggled to establish itself in Southern Caucasia, it is hardly possible to state that he established the field of Sayat’-Nova

9 Axverdean, 1852, preface, p. II
10 Axverdean, 1852, preface, p. XIII
studies, which became firmly rooted in the next generation. In fact, in the thirty-to-
forty years following Axverdean, more Georgian scholars published works on Sayat’-Nova than their Armenian counterparts.¹¹

Section 2 Nationalism and Socialism: 1880s-1910s

The next major Armenian publications after Axverdean’s emerged in the last fifteen years of the nineteenth century,¹² but for the most influential figure was Hovhannes T’umanyan who entered the realm of Sayat’-Nova studies in the 1910s. T’umanyan shared Axverdean’s emphasis on “the people,” but his nationalist approach was already nourished by an interest and love for folklore that had been cultivated from childhood in his home village of Dsel in the Lori region. T’umanyan’s composition in the Lori dialect about local village life and in imitation of its folklore and style amply attests to his dedication to traditional popular culture.¹³ He had begun reading Sayat’-Nova’s songs in second grade, around 1881 to 1883.¹⁴ His later experiences as an Armenian in Tiflis probably brought him further occasions to hear about Sayat’-Nova and take pride in his fellowcountryman. In addition to this natural affinity, T’umanyan’s humanistic and socialist standpoint against inequality and injustice made Sayat’-Nova’s songs resonate with greater empathy.

¹¹ Baxč’inyan, 1988, pp.7-8.
¹² For example, Gēorg Ter-Alek’sandrean’s Tiflizecoc’ mtavor kyank’ě, Yovhannēs Martiroseanc’i tparan, Tiflis, 1885; as quoted from Baxč’inyan, 1988, p.7.
¹³ For his childhood and compositions in a folkloric style, see Ėdvard Ėrbašyan’s chapter on him in: S.Sarinyan et al. ed.: Hay nor grakanut’yan patmut’yun, vol. 5, Yerevan, 1979, pp. 248,260-277, 298-305.
By this time Armenian public at large had nearly forgotten Sayat`-Nova,\textsuperscript{15} granted that the studies of Axverdean and others on Sayat`-Nova were confined to scholarly circles and had not impacted the largely illiterate society.\textsuperscript{16} Bearing this in mind, the fact that Sayat`-Nova's songs were still sung in Tiflis in T`umanyan’s time and transcribed around his period evidences his once-tremendous popularity.\textsuperscript{17}

T`umanyan’s individual personal and ideological motives for studying Sayat`-Nova dovetail perfectly with the region's larger historical and political context. T`umanyan was already discussing the great bard with his companions in the 1890s and after 1900 in the \textit{vernatun}, or Upper House, his salon where he would regularly hold gatherings with his friends, all of whom were celebrated Armenian or Tiflis figures.\textsuperscript{18} However, his articles exclusively dedicated to Sayat`-Nova were delayed by his involvement in seeking to establish peace between the combattants in the Armeno-Tatar conflict of 1905-1907, partly provoked by the 1905 Russian Revolution, which inflicted heavy losses on both sides. As a humanist and social activist, T`umanyan’s engaged in peace-making and humanitarian labors with cultural figures from every major nationality in Southern Caucasia, including the Tatars (later called Azerbaijanis) for which activities he was twice imprisoned by the Tsarist


\textsuperscript{16} According to Hovhannes Kostanyan, Axverdean’s edition was rare to find in the 1900s, and only philologists could benefit from that edition. See \textit{T`umanyaně žamanakakic`neri hušerum}, 2009, p. 464.

\textsuperscript{17} During the 1890s in the \textit{Vernatun} Sayat`-Nova’s songs were sung by Nikol Albalean. See Derenik Demirčyan’s memoir, \textit{T`umanyaně žamanakakic`neri hušerum}, 2009, p. 37.

\textsuperscript{18} T`umanyan, 1963, p.79.
authorities. As a result, all his articles on Sayat’-Nova were published in 1912 to 1917 after his release. Indeed, since Sayat’-Nova composed in the three major languages of Transcaucasia but displayed hardly any ethnic or religious prejudices, he was an appealing model for supporters of interethnic harmony. Indeed, T’umanyan’s initiation of the events in Tiflis commemorating Sayat’-Nova, especially the now-traditional Festival of Roses (Vardaton in Armenian and Vardoba in Georgian), in 1914, confirms the poet's stature as a symbol of regional harmony.

According to contemporary opinion, 1913 marked the bicentennial of Sayat’-Nova’s birth and hence provided the best occasion to renew public memory of him and at the same time to speak out for cooperation among different peoples, symbolized by his songs. Hovhannes T’umanyan was joined in this initiative by cultural figures of Tiflis like the Armenian landscape painter Gēorg Başinjañyan, the Georgian poet and scholar Ioseb Grišašvili, and the famed linguist and Caucasiologist Nikolai Marr. Yet T’umanyan's prominent social status and public appeal maintained his pre-eminence among them. Cultural figures from diverse ethnic groups in Southern Caucasus were invited to the events. Aşufs and sazandars in Tiflis, including the last major pre-revolutionary Armenian aşul Haziri, performed at its various venues. Funds were successfully raised for the repair of Sayat’-Nova’s tomb at the Armenian St. Gēorg Church in Tiflis, and an on-site monument in his honor was opened to the public on May 15, 1914, when the tradition of Vardaton/Vardoba also started. In response to T’umanyan’s appeal, Tiflis citizens of different nationalities,

ages, and occupations flocked to Sayat’-Nova’s tomb with red roses—the “king of flowers” and Sayat’-Nova’s favorite—in their hands as homage to the ašu压实 and as a symbol of the day.20 Vardaton/Vardoba remains a tradition in Tbilisi on the last Sunday of May.

Through a series of such activities later institutionalized, Hovhannes T`umanyan certainly succeeded not only in expanding Sayat’-Nova’s visibility beyond scholarly circles and the traditional setting of Tiflis. Derenik Demirçyan holds that T`umanyan first introduced Sayat’-Nova into the school curriculum21 and Hovhannes Kostanyan credits him with making the first published collection of Sayat’-Nova’s songs widely accessible.22

Section 3 Communism: 1920 to 1960

The first years of the Armenian Soviet Socialist Republic, established in 1920, coincided with the last years of Hovhannes T`umanyan, who passed away in 1923. At that time Eliše Č`arenč, the Armenian Bolshevik poet, chose Sayat’-Nova as his new source of inspiration between 1920 and 1921 and immediately began absorbing the bard’s style, as is obvious in his collection T̠alaran (Songbook).23 At the opening of this small collection, Č`arenč quotes Sayat’-Nova24 and applies many of Sayat’-

20 T`umanyan, 1963, p. 82.
24 Ibid., p. 219. The quotation is taken from the first three lines of the last stanza of Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian Song No. 18, with some variations. Compare Baxč` inyan, 1987, p. 34.
Nova’s phrases, motifs, techniques, and even his Tiflis Armenian grammar in his poems. The first poem in the collection bears witness to his fascination “In my dream I saw Sayat’-Nova approach me, saz in one hand:”

Eraz tesa, Sayat’-Noven mots ēkav sazè jeřin,
Hri nman vařman ginu őskêjrac t’asè jeřin,
Nstec’, anuš erger asav hin k’amanč’i masè jeřin,
Êipes asav, ases uner erknk’i almasè jeřin.

U ēn ergin őror-šoror, inč’pes huri, atlas u xas,
Erazis mej gozaln ēkav ink’n ēl vařman k’alč’r eraz,
Nazank’ arav, Sayat’-Novi sirtè le’rec’ mirg u muraz,
Kangneč’-mnac’ demk’ic’ k’ašac őskêkarac xasè jeřin.

Nayec’-nayec’ Sayat’-Noven, ampi nman txur mnac’,
Asav, “Č’arenc’, ės gozalic’ srtis me hin mrmuř mnac’,
Sirts vařvec’, moxir darjav ink’ê krak u hur mnac’, --
Du ēl nra govk’ê ara, or ga őskê mazè jeřin.

Êipes asav Sayat’-Noven u ver kac’av, orpes gišer,
Gnač’ noric’ txur u luř sirtè hazar muraz u ser,
Erazn anc’av – du mnac’ir, patkerk’ê k’o mnac’ luse,
Mek ēl im xelč sirtè mnac’ Sayat’-Novi sazè jeřin.25

(In my dream I saw Sayat’-Nova approach me, saz in one hand,
A gilt cup of fire-like burning wine in the other hand,
He sat down, singing sweet songs with an old kamancha in his hand,
Singing in such a way that you’d think he had heaven’s diamond in his hand.

And with the lullaby-like song, with satin and silk, like a houri,
The belle entered my dream, herself like a burning sweet dream,
Coquettishly, she filled Sayat’-Nova’s heart with fruit and desire,
She stood still, in her hand the gold-sewn silk veil drawn from her face.

Sayat’-Nova stared again and again, remaining sad as a cloud,
He said, “Č’arenc’, an old burn remains in my heart from this belle,
My heart burned, turned to ash; she remained fire and flame, --

Do you also praise her, so her golden tresses come to your hand.

In this way Sayat’-Nova sang, and stood up like night,
Again he went away, sad and silent, a thousand desires and loves in his heart,
The dream passed – you remained, your image remained splendid,
My poor heart, too, remained with Sayat’-Nova’s saz in its hand.)

Clearly Č’arenc’ appropriates much from ašulf literature the rhyme scheme
(AAAA, BBBA, CCCA, DDDA), repeated words and phrases (gozal, atlas u xas),
together with the dream motif. Moreover, he adopts Sayat’-Nova as his own master,
who introduces him to the belle, implying that Č’arenc’ regards himself as an ašulf
inspired by Sayat’-Nova, and continuing his inspired forerunner’s tradition. Indeed,
the whole Talaran collection borrows from the ašulf tradition in this manner down to
the use of Tiflis dialectal forms.

However, apart from this collection, poets of Č’arenc’’s generation, far from
forming connections with the past, viewed themselves as forging a new
unprecedented revolutionary aesthetic. Thus, at the same time he wrote Talaran,
Č’arenc’ was also working on his novel Erkir Nairi (Land of Nairi), a trenchant
critique of the outworkings of the nationalist cause in recent Armenian history.
Meanwhile, in the year 1922, immediately after completing Talaran, Č’arenc’ formed
a literary group called “The Three” with Azat Vštuni and Gevorg Abov, which
radically rejected the cultural legacy of the past, though this was a passing phase in

26 My own translation, with reference to the artistic translation by Diana Der Hovanessian and
Marzbed Margossian ed. and trans., Eghiše Charents, Land of Fire: Selected Poems, Ardis Publishers,
27 For example, in Canto IV, Č’arenc’ used ēlim “I shall be” instead of linem in modern standard
his artistic development. Meanwhile, among the major pre-revolutionary scholars of Sayat’-Nova, T’umanyan and others passed away, while others, like Nikol Albalyan, left the Soviet realm because of their political views. These expatriate scholars helped disseminate the name of Sayat’-Nova and advance Sayat’-Nova studies in the Diaspora, though Sayat’-Nova’s origins in the eastern Armenian sphere and Tiflis idiom resulted in his remaining less-known in the Diaspora than in the Armenian Republic in the first half of the twentieth century since, apart from Iranian-Armenian communities, most of the Diaspora has Western Armenian roots, standard linguistic form, and builds on the Western Armenian literary tradition.

The relative freedom of the 1920s under Lenin’s leadership gave way to the reimposition of censorship and more repressive centralized rule under Stalin in the next decade. The Great Purge (1936-1938) cost the lives of many intellectuals, including Č’arenc’, and the most creative and productive years of others, like Gurgen Mahari. Control of expression emerged already in 1932 with the founding of the Union of Writers of the USSR, the only official writers’ organization, and Socialist Realism was almost immediately proclaimed as the guiding principle of literary creation and later hailed as the paradigm for all the creative arts in the USSR. Its ideal of partiinost’ (Party-mindedness), later interpreted as propagation of Party policy and ideology, together with a rigorous focus on contemporary events, greatly restricted writers’ expression. Literary studies of past eras were required to highlight the role

---

28 In 1926 did Č’arenc’ matured from his youthful radicalism to gain an openness to learning from past masters. On this, see Bardakjian, 2000, pp. 207-210.
of reliably “proto-proletariat” authors in pointing the way forward to the present age. Hence, the first publication of the pithy poems of the thirteenth century satirist Frik as “the most profound medieval Armenian secular author” provided an occasion for attacking the fathers of the Mkhtarian monastic congregation as “bourgeois footmen” attempting to obliterate Frik’s memory as part of their benighted clerical perspective, though in fact, Frik’s satires are not as subversive and anti-religious as they were presented as being. As for Sayat’-Nova, his secular ašuƗ identity easily invited the label of people’s artist, and the contents of his songs, e.g. his petition to King Erekle II or a lament on his own fate, seemed to offer a “complaint against injustice” and embrace the class struggle.

All these apparent Soviet virtues, along with his genuine artistic excellence, saved Sayat’-Nova from neglect or erasure from histories of Armenian literature of the period. As a result, his works were published in the 1930s and his anniversaries commemorated. In addition, the State Minstrel Ensemble of Soviet Armenia, established in 1927, bore his name, while a music school founded in Yerevan in 1934 was renamed after him in 1944, as was a street in Tbilisi.

30 HXSH Patmut’yan yev Grakanut’yan Institut, Frik (žolovacu), Petakan Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1937, preface, p. 7.
33 https://hy.wikipedia.org/wiki/%D5%8D%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%A1%D5%A9-%D5%86%D5%B8%D5%BE%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%AB_%D5%A1%D5%B6%D5%BE%D5%A1%D5%B6_%D5%A5%D6%80%D5%A1%D5%AA%D5%B7%D5%BF%D5%A1%D5%AF%D5%A1%D5%B6_%D5%A4%D5%BA%D6%80%D5%B8%D6%81 as retrieved on Jul. 30, 2015.
Section 4 “Friendship of Peoples”: the 1960s

After Khrushchev established himself in the Kremlin, the Thaw gained real traction, bringing a measure of political, economic, and cultural freedom to the Eastern Bloc. Most living victims of the Great Purge were rehabilitated and resumed normal life, work, and creative activity, while the works of those who had died were republished. Censorship was relaxed to a degree and certain deviations from Socialist Realism tolerated. Contact with foreign academics (including in the Armenian Diaspora) were developed. Significantly, the suppressed nationalism of individual republics and covert discussions of secession, though officially discouraged, were increasingly tolerated now that the widespread use of fear tactics was no longer feasible. In this way, the original goal of creating the “Soviet Man” gave way to the compromise slogan of “Friendship of Peoples” (druzhba narodov) of the USSR, implicitly admitting the distinctiveness of ethnicities within the Union while avoiding the term “nations” that implied nationalism and bourgeois divisiveness. Sayat’-Nova became seen as a prime symbol for propagating this new policy in Transcaucasia. Already in the 1950s many important titles on Sayat’-Nova had appeared, including a collection featuring six of Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri songs alongside scores of Azerbaijani aşıqs’, published in 1957. Similarly, Əkbər Yerevanlı’s monumental work on Armeno-Azerbaijani literature connections, Literary Relations Between the Armenian and Azerbaijani Working Peoples, one of the few books including a

34 For details, see Chapter 1.
36 Ermeni-Azərbaycan şifahi xalq ədəbiyyatı əlaqələri, Haypethrat, Yerevan, 1958.
number of Azeri works by Armenian ǝšuƗs of all times, was published in Yerevan in 1958.

However, large-scale activities always require an occasion, which was suitably furnished by his two hundred and fiftieth anniversary in 1963. The initiator of the anniversary celebration, like T`umanyan’s Armenian Writers’ Union fifty years before, had a non-government identity more convenient than any official organization, the World Peace Council, at that time a nominally international civil organization promoting peace against “warmongers” and strengthening friendship among all peace-loving peoples—all under heavy Soviet direction. In its heyday in the 1950s and 1960s the World Peace Council organized numerous (if sometimes modest) anniversary commemorations for great cultural figures, most of whom had lived or still lived in Communist or Third-World countries, e.g. the 1968 honoring of five-hundred-twenty-fifth anniversary of the birth of Alisher Navoi, the late medieval poet of the “Uzbek people.”

The World Peace Council’s decision to honor Sayat’-Nova’s anniversary was declared only in 1963. A newly built major East-West boulevard in central Yerevan was named after him and opened on September 27 of that year. A monument was also erected in his honor at the West end of Moskovyan Avenue at the intersection

37 In 1962, the musical college in Stepanakert was already named after him. See http://www.panorama.am/en/culture/2012/05/14/sayat-nova-arcakh/, as retrieved on Aug. 26, 2014.
38 The usage of the term “Uzbek people” here is quite anachronistic, since during Navoi’s lifetime the Uzbeks were still a nomadic tribe to the North of Transoxiana, in sharp contrast to Navoi’s settled background in Khurásan.
39 https://hy.wikipedia.org/wiki/%D5%8D%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%A1%D5%A9-%D5%86%D5%B8%D5%BE%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%AB-%D5%BA%D5%B8%D5%B2%D5%B8%D5%BF%D5%A1-%D4%B5%D6%80%D6%87%D5%A1%D5%B6), as retrieved on Jul. 30, 2015.
with Maštoc` Avenue (then Lenin Prospect) and unveiled on the same date as the opening of Sayat`-Nova Avenue.⁴⁰ Other celebrations filled the year as well. Mass events occurred all over Soviet Armenia, significantly in the Diaspora and in Tbilisi, less significantly in other sites like Baku and Moscow.⁴¹

Inevitably, academic publications produced to order to coincide with specific memorials are always of variable quality, as Henrik Baxč`inyan notes in the preface to his *Sayat`-Nova, Life and Work*:

> It must be said, that especially in 1963, under the torrent of numerous articles, generated from the ferment of the anniversary, Sayat-Nova studies lost its previous scientific seriousness to some degree. And it occurred first and foremost, as stated in M. Hasrat`yan’s words, “by those unindustrious and incompetent people, who attempt to make discoveries, to say a new word with one stroke of the pen, by draining the gunpowder of philological ardor, often by thickening the fog of obscure questions.”⁴²

To balance this, it should be mentioned that the last intensive group of serious studies on Sayat`-Nova from Georgian and Azerbaijani scholars dates from this period. Baramiže’s complete edition of Sayat`-Nova’s Georgian songs,⁴³ Həmid Arash’s anthology of Sayat`-Nova’s Azerbaijani songs,⁴⁴ Mirəli Seyidov’s *Singer of

---

⁴⁰ [https://hy.wikipedia.org/wiki/%D5%8D%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%A1%D5%A9-%D5%86%D5%B8%D5%BE%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%AB-%D5%B0%D5%B8%D6%82%D5%B7%D5%A1%D5%B2%D5%A2%D5%B5%D5%B8%D6%82%D6%80_%D4%B5%D6%80%D6%87%D5%A1%D5%B6](https://hy.wikipedia.org/wiki/%D5%8D%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%A1%D5%A9-%D5%86%D5%B8%D5%BE%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%AB-%D5%B0%D5%B8%D6%82%D5%B7%D5%A1%D5%B2%D5%A2%D5%B5%D5%B8%D6%82%D6%80_%D4%B5%D6%80%D6%87%D5%A1%D5%B6), as retrieved on Jul. 30, 2015.

⁴¹ Unfortunately, there is little pictorial or audio-visual record of those events to gage the scale, and political and artistic connotations of those celebrations.

⁴² Baxč`inyan, 1988, p. 17.


Transcaucasian peoples, and Ökbər Yerevanlı’s section on Sayat’-Nova in his Azeri-Armenian literary relations (of which the first three were published in 1963, probably as parts of the academic outpouring dedicated to the great așuf, and the last in 1968).

The celebrations inaugurated in the 1960s expanded Sayat’-Nova’s reputation over the rest of the Soviet Union outside Transcaucasia as well as in the Armenian Diaspora, engendering unprecedented activity in research, art works, plays, and films.

A. Literature

Numerous poems by Armenian, Georgian, Azerbaijani, and Russian poets as well as by representatives of other nationalities in the Soviet Union honored Sayat’-Nova. In addition to the contributions of famous Armenian poets like T’umanyan, Č’arenc’ and others before the 1960s, the small collection Sayat’-Nova in the Songs of Poets, featuring both narrative and lyric poems, contains several non-Armenian and non-Georgian pieces, some of which were probably composed to mark his jubilee.

The Armenian authors represented include a few așufs including Č’ivani, the most accomplished Armenian așuf of the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, who comments as follows:

Sayat’-Novi asaci pes

45 Pevets narodov zakavkaz’ia, Izd-vo AN Az SSR, Baku, 1963, which is the Russian translation of the same author’s Sayat-Nov, Azərbaycan SSR Elmlər Akademiyasının Nəşriyyatı, Baku, 1954.
48 The three longest examples of narrative poems are Gəfəm Saryan’s Sayat’-Nova, Məmməd Rahim (penname of Məmməd Hüseynov)’s Sayat-Nov (excerpts), and T’at’ul Huryan’s Songs to Sayat’-Nova, in Ananyan, 1963, pp. 21-28, 33-37, 48-76.
(As Sayat’-Nova said,  
the singer is the nation’s farmer,  
martyred with a thousand pains,  
the singer is the true martyr.)

After Jivani, works of a few other Armenian ašuƗs, Gusan Ašot, and Gusan Havasi, fill out the collection. Though not as intensively as Č`arenc’, some of the Armenian poets composed a gazel or muxammes, ašuƗ genres utilized by Sayat’-Nova.

Another literary genre lauding Sayat’-Nova is Zarzand Daryan’s two-volume historical novel, Sayat’-Nova. The novel sets the ašuƗ against the background of eighteenth-century history then accepted in Soviet Armenia, exploiting every conceivable plot twist to achieve this. As a result, it highlights issues of class struggle and the struggle for popular liberation from the “backward” Oriental empires of Turkey and Iran, and extols the Russian political orientation displayed by Georgian and Armenian leaders.

51 Apart from the already quoted and translated poem “Eraz tesa, Sayat’-Noven mots ēkav sazê jeřin”, Č’arenc’ s other works included in this small collection are all beyt’s (couplets), in the same style as the full poem. See Ananyan, 1963, pp. 14-16.  
52 For example, Sahak Taronc’i has a “Gazel to Sayat’-Nova” (Gazel Sayat’-Novayin), while Gusan (ašuƗ) Havasi’s song is a muxammases. See Ananyan, 1963, pp. 93, 112-113. Both Hamo Sahyan and S. Taronc’i have poems in which Persian and Turkic loanwords are used more than other works. See Ananyan, 1963, 80, 90. The only exception is Skandar-Nov’a’s “Sayat’-Nova”, which he explicitly noted as “in an ašuƗ style” (ašuƗakan), and wrote in imitation to Sayat’-Nova’s Tiflis dialect, but without many loanwords. This poem was written on the occasion of the laying of the foundation of Sayat’-Nova’s monument presided over by T’umanyan and Bašinjafyan, i.e. in the 1910s, decades before the event in 1963. See Ananyan, 1963, pp. 84-85.  
It opens with a young deacon from Tiflis in Halpat monastery telling the boy Arut’ in about Davit’ Bek and his struggle for independence against the Persian overlord. Fleeing Tiflis to escape King T’eymuraz’s wrath for being in love with the princess Anna, Sayat’-Nova takes the golden opportunity to journey to Ganja, Karabagh, and Yerevan and back to Tiflis to learn the current situation in various Transcaucasian locales and meet local Azerbaijanis and Armenians (including the high-ranking statesman and poet Molla Pənah Vaqif, fellow Armenian ašufs like K’ešišoili, and Armenian peasants) in order to unite as many as possible from these regions with the Georgians to help gain their independence. The bard is even imprisoned by the Persian Khan of Yerevan, but manages to flee with his Muslim companion. Although a Christian, he bears no prejudice against Muslims, as proved by his friendship with Molla Pənah Vaqif, varied poets from Ganja and Karabagh, and, at the very end of the novel, the Persian poet Mirza Ashrafi. In the second volume, Sayat’-Nova befriends Joseph Emin, the British trained pioneer of the Armenian liberation movement. Sayat’-Nova had already made impressed himself upon Prince Erekle for the talent the poet demonstrated while serving in the Persian Nader Shah’s expedition against India. By bravely shielding the prince from the Shah’s wrath, the bard earns the prince’s sincere and intimate friendship. Back in

54 Daryan, 1960, pp. 68-71.
55 Daryan, 1960, pp. 365-506.
56 Ibid.
57 Daryan, 1963, pp. 541-556.
59 Daryan, 1960, pp. 79-80.
60 Daryan, 1960, pp. 138-141.
Georgia, Sayat’-Nova does everything he can to support the Georgian state of future King Erekle II of Kakheti and Kartli and further the people’s welfare and aspirations for independence. He never hesitates to confront and resist oppressive, selfish upper-class figures who disregard the welfare of the Armenian and Georgian peoples (including rich clerics or nobles like King Erekle’s consort Darejan and the Grand Prince Abașiże), often by satirical songs and witty speeches. His admirable qualities win the princess’s love but alienate him from the king and make him too many enemies. These generally rich and powerful enemies’ orchestrated attacks ultimately lead to his downfall and enforced entry into a monastery, yet he never gives up hope. Even in Hālpat monastery, he serves the locals with medical care and fights to expel the invading Lezgins, never afraid of offending conservative clerics. Finally, he sacrifices his life when Tiflis falls to the Qajars.

Clearly, the friendship between Sayat’-Nova and Joseph Emin owes much to poetic license, since Emin arrived in Tiflis only in 1763, years after Sayat’-Nova’s exile from court. Moreover, there is no evidence in Emin’s memoir to support his acquaintance with a bard once favored by King Erekle II. Significantly, however, Queen Darejan, Sayat’-Nova’s major adversary, was indeed a powerful opponent of

---

61 The detailed description of Sayat’-Nova’s final confrontation with King Erekle II and the latter’s order of the poet’s exile are presented in retrospective, as narrated by the monk Step’anos in Daryyan, 1963, pp. 378-393.
62 Plots in the third part of vol. 2, the final section of the complete novel, pp. 351-557.
63 Joseph Emin, *Life and adventures by Emin Joseph Emin, 1726-1809, written by himself*, in 2 vols., London, 1792. However, Melik’set’-Bek did once believe that Sayat’-Nova’s fall from grace and exile took place in 1763-1764, in connection with Georgian Catholicos Anton and/or Emin, as quoted from Baxč’inyan, 1988, pp. 308-309. This supposition could well be the source for the plots concerning Emin in the novel. However, Baxč’inyan also mentions that M. Hasrat’yan accepted this supposition, too. This, however, counters Hasrat’yan’s argument that Sayat’-Nova must have been expelled from the Georgian court earlier than 1762-1764. See Hasrat’yan, 1963, preface, p. XXIX.
Georgian alignment with Russia and hence portrayed as one of the villains of the novel.

Along with its heavy-handed ideology, other aspects of this novel leave much to be desired. In endnotes to the second volume the author answers two major complaints from readers of the first regarding the inclusion of too many foreign words, phrases and dialects, and unexplained historical events and figures. The author had sought an accurate representation of Sayat’-Nova’s language, style, and daily speech in the region, but did so at the price of confusing his readers, unfamiliar with that idiom. As a result, in the second tome the author reduced the frequency of foreign expressions and added explanatory endnotes for some historical events and obsolete customs.64

The flaw of over-writing65 characterizes several aspects of the plot, especially exaggerating Sayat’-Nova’s historical role. Examples include his mission to Ganja and Karabagh as Prince Erekle’s envoy in order to unify against the Persians both Azerbaijani khans and Armenian melik’s alike, as well as his involvement in Georgian politics throughout the novel, especially his befriending Joseph Emin and shared aspiration for the development of Georgia and the liberation of Armenia. Similarly, at the end of the novel, after decades of monastic life, Sayat’-Nova’s fame is still so widespread, that Agha Mohamed Khan, the Qajar ruler of Persia, offers him his admiration, and even wants him to serve at court with the pre-condition of his

---

64 See Emin, 1792, vol. 2, pp. 559-562.
65 For example, Emin’s experience before he came to the Caucasus: vol. 2, pp. 226-249.
conversion to Islam, the refusal of which costs the aged bard his life. The cumulative effect of these exaggerations is counter-productive and merely reinforce the impression that this novel is, at most, of mediocre quality.

B. Painting

Portraits of Sayat’-Nova\textsuperscript{66} depict a wide range of images relating to the ašuƗ or to Armenian music, art, and culture in general. Research on the identity of the painter of these works has generally pointed to the accomplished Armenian painter Hrač’ya Ruxkyan, who produced a number of works in the 1940s. The nearly identical features of these portraits have become the standard for later painters. However, no portraits of Sayat’-Nova predating Ruxkyan’s, nor any notes of Ruxkyan’s on his Sayat’-Nova portraits have been come to light to explain the genesis of the appearance he gave the bard such as extant earlier depictions or descriptions of him by his descendants.

In his 1960 portrait of Sayat’-Nova, Ruxkyan shows him wearing a costume essentially identical to the performing suit of Armenian ašuƗs of the post-World War II period still employed in performances today. Its design seems to reflect a miniature painted by Naļaš Yovnat’an in 1765, now housed in the Matenadaran Institute of Ancient Manuscripts in Yerevan, depicting a musician, usually identified as an ašuƗ, in a majles or gathering with entertainment.\textsuperscript{67} Significantly, however, pictures or photos

\textsuperscript{66} See also the depiction of Sayat’-Nova by Kristin Saleri, an Istanbul Armenian woman painter, as seen on http://www.kristinsaleri.com/Kristin-Saleri-Bard.html, as retrieved on Dec. 31, 2015.

\textsuperscript{67} Manuscript No. 3628 (other sources cite the number as 4426), p. 12, as quoted from Manya Lazaryan, Hay Kerparvestê XVII-XVIII darerum: Getankanč’ ıtuyun, HSSH GA Hratarakč’ ıtuyun, Yerevan, 1974, p. 259. For an analysis of the miniature, see pp. 155-156. However, there she does not discuss the characteristics of the costume.
of nineteenth to twentieth centuries Armenian ašuňs like Širin, Jīvani, and Jamali show most of them wearing a čoxa or cherkeska, the traditional Caucasian men's coat. The second telling detail is that in the miniature the musician wears a Turkish-style high hat, since covering the head even indoors was customary in the early modern period in the Near East. However, in modern Armenian ašuň indoor performances of individuals, small groups, or large ensembles, musicians hardly wear any headgear at all.

C. Statues and Monuments

A simple and solemn monument to Sayat’-Nova adorns the corner of Moskovyan and Maštoc’ Avenues in central Yerevan, west of the Sayat’-Nova Music School, the Komitas National Conservatory, and the Opera House. The unusual white marble monument by sculptor Ara Harut’yunyan and architect Ėdvard Sarapyan was unveiled on September 27, 1963. Its window-like shape was probably inspired by Sayat’-Nova’s Armenian Song No. 41, beginning with the famous lament Ašxarēs mē p`anjara ē (“My world is a jail”), since the word p`anjara translates both as “jail” here and as “window” in modern Persian. Sayat’-Nova’s head is carved at the upper left, flanked by three youngsters’ heads on the upper right, interspersed with roses in bas-relief, displaying expressions of listening or contemplating, with eyes closed. On the lower left, one of Sayat’-Nova’s best-known verses informs the onlooker that “Not everybody can drink my water.” Opposite this and slightly higher than the inscription, an ever-running fountain flows.

D. Music and theater

Although less known, musical and theatrical evocations of Sayat’-Nova also exist. The most important expression was an opera appropriately entitled Sayat’-Nova written by the major Armenian composer Alek’sandr Harut’yunyan in 1969.

E. Cinema

By 1960 the Yerevan Television Studio had already shown a television film on the bard's life, directed by Kim Arzumanyan on a script written by Sayat’-Nova scholar Hrayr Muradyan. The 1960 film features a completely Armenian cast and was probably shot exclusively in Soviet Armenia. It loyally follows the ideological path of “Friendship of Peoples” on the history of Transcaucasia in general and in modelling particular characters. We are introduced to a typical great poet of the people, moving through a plot so standard as to be nearly interchangeable with any Soviet history film on great poets of the people from their respective republics (like Nizami Gəncəvi and İmadeddin Nasimi of Azerbaijan, or Navoi of Uzbekistan).

Young Arut’in, an apprentice at a silk mill, wants to follow Dosti, the master Armenian aşuş of Tiflis, for his love of art and antipathy to his merciless employer Avet Agha. But, born poor, he cannot pay off what he owes the latter. Moved by the youth’s sincerity, Aşuş Dosti settles his debt. With this new master, Arut’in wanders across the East and learns much. But his love for home eventually draws him back to Tiflis. In a contest at the Georgian court he overcomes the great Muslim aşuş.70

69 For details of this film, see http://www.arm-cinema.am/am/features_and_shorts/199.html as retrieved on Jul. 30, 2015.

70 Here there might be a mistake in the setting since according to the dialogue, the Muslim aşuş master is playing a saz, but the instrument seems to be a tar in fact.
Fatullah and thus becomes the court poet of King Erekle II, wins the love of the Princess Anna, and acquires the professional name Sayat'-Nova (“King of Songs”) from his master. While still in the king’s service, he loyally acts as a “servant of the people” (xalxi nok’ar, in his own words) and speaks for the people and the oppressed against the nobles, the wealthy, and members of the clergy in word and deed. He regards himself the equal of the royal family and even dares confront the king, while not recanting his bold affection for Princess Anna. All these activities finally contributed to his downfall and enforced monasticism. But years later, facing Agha Mohammad Khan Qajar’s invasion, he threw off the cassock, leaving the safety of Haghpat Monastery for Tiflis with his kamancha (which he secretly keeps against monastic rules) to stand side by side with the defenders of the capital to promote their morale with his music, and met his death there. The film is as much a musical, replete with Sayat'-Nova’s songs, ašuf performance, Armenian, Georgian, and possibly other Eastern music, folk songs, and dance scenes. But poorly financed, with its highly ideological implications embodied in its plot and script lines, and workmanlike performances, this film has to be labeled an unexceptional tribute to the great bard.

After the 1960 television film, Paruyr Sevak prepared the script for a short

71 In the film, Sayat’-Nova is sent to Haghpat Monastery and becomes Father Step’anos directly after his expulsion from court, different from the fact we have known that he was forced to take holy order and to marry Marmar, years before the latter’s death and his becoming a celibate monk. Furthermore, the setting of the Haghpat plot might be anachronistic, too; since the status of Haghpat Monastery’s architecture and the exact location of its order in the second half of the eighteenth century have caused disagreements among scholars already, as quoted from Baxč’inyan, 1988, pp.88-99.

72 The battle scenes, with medieval siege tactics and weapons, but no firearms, are anachronistic.

73 The abstract above is based on the film clip on Youtube: https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=iX3GKGvTXQ, as retrieved on Sept. 10th 2015, and Muradyan’s script. See Hrayr Muradean, Sayeayt’ Nova (kinovipak), Tparan Mšak, Beirut, 1960.

73 Steffen, 2013, p. 121.
documentary on Sayat’-Nova for the jubilee in 1963, directed by Gurgen Balasanyan. Unfortunately, this was inaccessible to me.

The most famous cinematographic representation of Sayat’-Nova is Sergei Parajanov’s *The Color of Pomegranate*. In 1966, Parajanov accepted the commission from Armenfilm, the national studio of Soviet Armenia, to produce a film on the life of Sayat’-Nova, and prepared a screenplay in the same year. The commission proved to be one of the most complicated in the director’s career, featuring an extremely convoluted process from its inception until its final release in the process of which the original storyline and its broader symbolism was significantly transformed. The arduous production continued for about two years. After Parajanov removed hours of footage himself, the film was further censored in Soviet Armenia. As the sequence, its first released version in Armenian was premiered in Yerevan, October 1969, but denied public distribution. Only years later Sergei Yutkevich, an old guard Soviet director, prepared its second released version in Russian for public distribution, with some differences from the older released version.

Commenting on Parajanov’s central cinematographic perspective, Steffen states: “from the outset Parajanov emphasizes the universal – as opposed to narrowly national – significance of the poet.” This tendency is clearly manifested in his last film *Ashik Kerib* (1988), drawn from Lermontov’s “Turkish story” and directed when

---

74 Steffen, 2013, p. 122.
77 Quotations from both Briusov and Steffen are cited from: Steffen, 2013, p. 123.
the Karabagh question was already escalating. The story of Ashik Kerib is widespread throughout South Caucasia, with many variations, including the Armenian one associated with Tiflis, which Lermontov followed. However, Parajanov set the background as Azerbaijani, shot it in and around Baku and elsewhere in Azerbaijan, and prepared the original soundtrack in Azeri—decisions which may explain its belated Armenian release. Moreover, Parajanov opens the screenplay of *The Color of Pomegranate* with a remark by Valerii Briusov, significant Russian symbolist poet in the early twentieth century and the most important Russian translator of Sayat’-Nova:

Sayat-Nova is one of those first-rate poets who, by force of his genius already ceases to be the property of an individual people, but becomes a favorite of all humanity.

In the screenplay Parajanov offered a loose reflection of Sayat’-Nova’s life, following his chronology in the chapters into which it was subdivided with titles “explicitly indicating the contents of each scene.” The chapters or episodes roughly include:

- The three Transcaucasian peoples’ lament on Sayat’-Nova
- The poet’s childhood

---

78 A number of books have covered this period. See, for example, Ronald Grigor Suny, *Looking toward Ararat: Armenia in modern history*, Indiana University Press, Bloomington, IN, 1993, repr. 2006, pp. 195-212.
79 For example, from my personal experience, many of the murals depicted in the film were taken from the palace of Sheki Khan in Sheki, a small town at the foot of Great Caucasus, in Northwestern Azerbaijan.
81 Steffen, 2013, p. 131.
His entry into the court as ašul Sayat’-Nova  
The origin of Sayat’-Nova’s love with Princess Anna  
Vision symbolizing the Persian invasion of Georgia and Armenia by Nader Shah in Sayat’-Nova’s dream  
Sayat’-Nova’s retreat into monastery  
A night of asceticism and mysticism that befell Sayat’-Nova  
Sayat’-Nova’s search for a shroud for the late Catholicos  
Sayat’-Nova’s dream about his childhood  
Spring  
Sayat’-Nova’s final journey to Tiflis  
Sayat’-Nova’s death^82

These scenes are clearly based on Sayat’-Nova’s biography, combined with Parajanov’s own inventions. The immediate impression that the screenplay reflects “Friendship of peoples”, in reinforced by the director’s comments in an interview with Steffen in 1988 on location outside Baku: “The cultures of peoples, especially of neighbors, are vessels for communicating with each other… We, the filmmakers of Transcaucasia, the spokesmen of brotherly peoples, have never filmed a single picture together.” There his use of the Russian term, “brotherly peoples” (narodov-brat’ev), reflects the contemporary Soviet political rhetoric,^83 as do the peculiar multi-ethnic, multilingual background of Sayat’-Nova’s home of old Tiflis and the multiethnic cast of the movie.^84

Reviewing the screenplay in more detail reveals the very idea of “three” permeating the film and implying the three constituent nations of Transcaucasia: Armenians, Azerbaijanis, and Georgians, although the Armenian and Georgian elements appear more explicitly than their Azerbaijani counterparts. Thus, in the

---

^83 Steffen, 2013, p. 241  
^84 For the nationalities of its major actors and actresses, see Steffen, 2013, pp. 124-125.
second scene subtitled “miniature depicting the lamentation of the Transcaucasian peoples in memory of Sayat’-Nova,” three black-garbed mourning women leave three steles, while three young men carry sheep. While the first woman and man are explicitly styled as “Armenian” and the second as “Georgian,” the ethnicity of the third is unstated. In addressing the three stelae, the first is called xač‘ar in Armenian; the second k‘va in Georgian, but the third does not bear an Azerbaijani name. In the portion relating to Sayat’-Nova’s childhood in Tiflis, three religious establishments appear, the Georgian Sioni Cathedral, the Armenian Surb Gēorg Church, and an unnamed mosque, despite there having been more than one mosque in old Tiflis for different Muslim communities or sects. Then the young poet hears three sorts of singing: Georgian songs from Sioni, Armenian chants from S. Gēorg, and singing from the Karaite mosque rather than an Azerbaijani one.

As indicated above, there are a number of significant contrasts between the original screenplay and the released versions of the film. One aspect of this transformation is the almost complete disappearance of the scenes just mentioned featuring representatives of the three Southern Caucasian nations. In fact, the only occasion where the motif of “three” is preserved relates to Princess Anna, who enters a (symbolic) tomb as one line of Sayat’-Nova’s song is heard in each of Georgian, Azeri, and Armenian in turn. Yet, in the released versions, even there the importance of the two non-Armenian languages is much reduced. And besides plot events

---

85 There is more than one released version of The Color of Pomegranate, cf. Steffen, 2013, pp. 131-136.
concerning members of the royal family who are obviously Georgian, there are few explicit Georgian elements other than the section on the poet’s childhood discussed above. “Muslim” or “Azerbaijani” elements appear even less. Meanwhile, the image of the “invader” towards the end of the film is still quite obviously “Tatar,” judging from his fur hat and facial features. Similarly, the peoples’ lament and vision of Nader Shah’s invasion were discarded, though some motifs of them might be used in other sequences. 86

The remaining focus on the bard’s Armenian context has led some scholars to argue that one of the issues the resulting film presented to critics was its nationalist penchant. In this connection, the opening scene is often referenced, in which the juice emanating from the three pomegranates soaks the white canvas in the shapes of historical Armenia. 87 However, if that were the intent, why did the Soviet authorities leave it in the released edition? In addition to Parajanov’s later exploration of Azerbaijani culture in Ashik Kerib and Georgian culture in The Legend of the Surami Fortress, it is significant that his first feature film, Shadows of Forgotten Ancestors, already afforded a colorful (if sometimes fanciful) presentation of the Hutsul Ukrainians’ traditional culture. Indeed, that film provoked criticism of Soviet policy in Ukraine and later protests in Kyiv, and involved Parajanov himself in Ukrainian politics as the director of this politically sensitive film. 88 Hence it is important to distinguish his concerns with folklore and ethnography in these depictions of national

86 For a comparative list of episodes in the script and two released versions, see Steffen, 2013, pp. 134-136.
87 As quoted from Steffen, 2013, p. 8.
88 Steffen, 2013, pp. 73-82.
culture from committed political engagement.

It seems that the main issues of contention with the authorities emerged in the aesthetic realm in terms of his concerted effort to break free from the constraints of Socialist Realism through his audacious presentation of the hero, so unlike that of the conventional biographical film discussed earlier and his embrace of religious and erotic elements. Thus, Soviet film critics like Sabir Rizaev and Michael Bleiman,89 were more concerned with the film’s many failures as a biography. As mentioned before, the screenplay loosely follows Sayat’-Nova’s chronology. However, what is more innovative and risky is that, in preparing the script, Parajanov decided “to write the scenario as a ‘film poem’ and to focus on ‘revealing the source roots of Sayat’-Nova’s poetry and his times to the era,’ rather than recounting a straightforward biography.” This stand was controversial for the script editors in both Yerevan and Moscow90 and resulted in the somewhat paradoxical instruction Parajanov received to remove all direct reference to Sayat’-Nova from the film. Even the title was to be changed from Sayat’-Nova to the final version of The Color of Pomegranate, based on comments by the Armenian Communist Party apparatus and various members of the creative intelligentsia. As a result, the removal of biographical details and Parajanov’s original chapter titles, plus the substitution of new titles written by popular Armenian novelist and short story writer Hrant Mat’evosyan, though they might not confuse an Armenian audience, already familiar with the story, posed a

89 Steffen, 2013, pp. 154-156.
great barrier for non-Armenian viewers without that background.\textsuperscript{91} This might just be the reason why different Russian titles closer to those in the script were introduced in Yutkevich’s version.\textsuperscript{92}

Ideologically-tinged criticism mainly attacks the film’s “subjectivism,” its “disavow[al] of realism” and “archaic thinking,” rather than “bourgeois nationalism.” By giving this criticism the title “Archaists or Innovators?” its author Mikhail Bleiman was not only criticizing Parajanov, but the whole “poetic school” of cinematography. Hence “various memos in the film’s censorship file complained about its excess of religious imagery, which still abounds in the finished film.”\textsuperscript{93}

Indeed, the released edition of \textit{The Color of Pomegranate} starts and finishes in monasteries, with about half the story taking place after Sayat-Nova has entered a monastery, and famed religious establishments like Sanahin, Halpat, Salmosavank’ and Axt’ala monasteries in Armenia provide shooting locations. Armenian miniatures illustrating the Bible are what Arut’in is pondering over with much curiosity as a boy. In the episode of king Erekle’s royal hunt, the princess stands before a masterpiece of medieval Georgian art, the lavishly detailed Khakhuli triptych, made up from parts dated between the eighth and twelfth centuries.\textsuperscript{94} Many props in the episode about the catholicos’ funeral were borrowed from the treasury of the Holy Ėjmiacin, Mother See of the Armenian Apostolic Church. Armenian and Georgian chanting and recital of biblical passages, prayers, and bell-ringing enliven the full film. For example, we hear

\textsuperscript{91} As quoted from Steffen, 2013, pp. 131-132.
\textsuperscript{92} As quoted from Steffen, 2013, pp. 131-133.
\textsuperscript{93} As quoted from Steffen, 2013, p. 132.
\textsuperscript{94} Steffen, 2013, p. 150.
the Armenian recital of excerpts from Proverbs in the first episode on the poet’s childhood, followed by prayers to St. George in Armenian, while the Georgian hymn Shen khar venakhi (Thou Art a Vineyard) provides background music in the episode of the royal hunt. In addition to these religious elements in the plot, scenery, props, and soundtrack Parajanov openly treats questions of faith. For example, a tableau in Sayat’-Nova’s dream sequence resembles the Nativity. Such an abundance of religious connotations contrasts sharply with the earlier television film which reduced Sayat’-Nova's decades of clerical life to two or three scenes lasting some ten minutes and highlights his unrequited love for Princess Anna and his devotion to "the people.”

Steffen also remarks on the erotic scenes, many of which were left in the outtakes, such as most of the male and female nude shots in the Sulphur Bath of Tiflis, Sayat’-Nova’s erotic dream in the monastery, and the monk peeping at the bathing Sayat’-Nova. In spite of these erasures, the nude breast in the Sulphur Bath remains in the released version.

In the same way that Soviet censorship proceeded along a paradoxical path by celebrating the bard as a type without specifying him as an individual, Soviet cinema displayed ambivalence toward the artistic features of the “poetic school” which The Color of Pomegranate abundantly illustrates. As certain scholars have noted, films of the “poetic school” typically relied on “a slight story, and concentration on folklore, ethnography, exotic motifs and, in general, the visual elements of the

---

95 Steffen, 2013, p. 150.
96 For these two aspects, see Steffen, 2013, pp. 132-154, passim.
97 All quoted from Steffen, 2013, pp. 17-23.
film ….. These films resemble a beautiful painting, an old print or drawing, rather than the usual ‘filmed play’ … where a dramatic story is acted on the screen.” Hence Bleiman criticized the common flaws of an “anonymous” school of Soviet filmmakers in connection with heavy use of allegories or parables, a visual style tending toward static images, and a “predilection for ethnographic, exotic-historical material.”98 As “Parajanov’s most thoroughgoing attempt at cinematic poetry and arguably the most vigorous example of this genre in postwar Soviet cinema,”99 The Color of Pomegranate drew criticism, which ironically attested to its merits and those of the poetic films in general. For example, critic Sabir Rizaev singled out the film’s painterly visual style, described certain shots as “poetry in composition and light,” and asserted that exposure to its “exceptional artistic culture” would “enrich” viewers and encourage them to “relate to the beautiful with greater care.”100 Steffen argues that poetic cinema tended to become associated with “national” subject matter101 partially through these same artistic virtues. In the chapter on The Color of Pomegranate, he thoroughly analyzes the film and explains many of its Armenian, Georgian, Persian, or "Oriental"102 elements. But he avoids focusing on the details of the life and works of Sayat’-Nova in his analysis. In this regard, students of the bard should particularly consider the following scenes.

The film's first section covering the poet's childhood presents a scene in a dye

---
98 As quoted from Steffen, 2013, p. 155.
100 As quoted from Steffen, 2013, pp. 154-155.
102 As Steffen calls it. See Steffen, 2013, passim.
house. In addition to the possible symbolism of dyeing, it highlights the biographical
detail discussed by numerous scholars that before becoming court poet, Sayat’-Nova
worked in textiles. This point demonstrates how Parajanov represented his hero's
biography poetically.

Similar details appear in the film’s second section, which portrays Sayat’-Nova
as court poet. His principal musical instrument is always the kamancha, while the tar
appears rotating behind him only once. Steffen gave his interpretation of the
kamancha at its first appearance in the poet’s childhood, however, here he interprets
the instrument’s beautiful mother-of-pearl inlay stands as a metonym for Sayat’-
Nova’s art, as a piece of art with “its lavishly decorated surface just one expression of
the creative spirit of an entire people.”103 However, another aspect of its symoblism is
unlocked through the bard’s popular song comparing the kamancha to a woman and
declaring his love for it. This enriched understanding then clarifies another scene
where the princess showers mother-of-pearl on the instrument symbolically. Similarly,
in the same scene the princess is tatting lace--another detail from Sayat’-Nova’s songs
where lace (Ialamk`ar) functions as a common trope for female beauty. Again,
Parajanov may be symbolically representing the poet's life and works through these
evocative details obvious to the Armenian audience, if not to others.

Other features of The Color of Pomegranate also deserve closer consideration.
The first concerns the work's ethnographic quality--an essential element of poetic
films embodied in all Parajanov’s four completed films. As mentioned above, all the

plots derive from the history or literature of a given nation, and exhibit scenes characteristic or evocative of its daily life, arts, or religious rites. However, the viewer should not accept every such scene as historically accurate. The Easter sacrifice scene depicting old village women vying together as they skin a sheep and stew the mutton is not as aspect of traditional Armenian custom. Likewise, parents did not stand outside and mark a child's forehead with rooster blood, as Arut`in’s parents do.

Certainly, the sign of the cross is connected with baptism, but relates to the priest’s application of holy oil place. Similarly, in discarded footage, a nun is punished for having affairs by being dressed in white, hung from the ceiling, then repeatedly pulled up and dropped down in a purely imaginary form of ecclesiastical punishment. In brief, those shots do not document, but evoke, folklore in an artistic way. Indeed, it emerges that Parajanov had no background in Armenian folklore, but was a genius inventor of symbols. In a scene retained in the released edition the aged Sayat`-Nova tries to get water from a fountain in a church's wall-niche, only to find it has dried up. According to anthropologist Levon Abrahamyan, who was present at the shoot, such scenes are disconnected from the real world. Nevertheless, the motif admirably suggests that Sayat`-Nova’s “water of life” is also drying up. It is obvious that Parajanov was employing imagination, symbolism, folkloric elements, satire, and irony to evoke Sayat`-Nova, and his poetry and life.

---

104 As presented by Levon Abrahamyan during his lecture on the film at the Graduate Seminar of the Armenian Studies Program in UCLA, on Mar. 31, 2015.
105 Interestingly, one of his most important colleagues, cameraman Yuri Illienko, was unavailable to participate on the shoot, on which, see Levon Abrahamyan’s lecture. At the same time, static shots are ubiquitous in Parajanov’s all featured films.
Parajanov’s use of static shots is also characteristic of the poetic school. But he employs them so frequently in *The Color of Pomegranate* that the motif becomes part of his personal style. The whole film is made up of tableaux, long and short.\(^{106}\) Likewise, any dialogue has been replaced by side monologue, or pure mime. In addition, the director relies heavily on what Steffen called the “rhyme” device—a basic tool of Parajanov’s craft, along with symbol, metaphor, and repetition, in which primarily visual or audio motifs echo throughout the film to provide an underlying structure. Steffen cites as an example the recurring visual pattern established by juxtaposing the shot of bleeding pomegranates with that of the bleeding dagger in the prologue.\(^{107}\) Abrahamian’s presentation about *The Color of Pomegranate* also pointed out its “visual rhyming,” explaining the term more comprehensively than Steffen. According to Abrahamian, the motifs used to form rhymes are often themselves meaningless, such as that of the woman firing a pistol and killing a child above her and throwing a golden ball into the air which occurs in the royal hunt and monk Sayat’-Nova’s dream.\(^{108}\) Yet the repetition of the same meaningless actions in other parts of the film itself forms “visual rhyming” resembling rhyme in poetry, and perfectly fits the title “poetic film.”\(^{109}\)

Steffen discusses much of the eroticism in the film, including scenes with both heterosexual and homosexual connotations from both the released versions and

---

\(^{106}\) Levon Abrahamyan’s lecture.  
\(^{107}\) Steffen, 2013, p. 139.  
\(^{108}\) Steffen also labels the tableau of Monk Sayat’-Nova’s dream “difficult to decipher” “as a whole”. See Steffen, 2013, p. 147.  
\(^{109}\) Levon Abrahayman’s lecture.
outtakes. Yet he does not give much explanation on the reason why erotic scenes are so frequent in the footage. The only remaining erotic shoot, that of the nude torso in the Sulphur Bath of Tiflis, as mentioned before, has been explained by Steffen as the symbol for Arut`in’s awakening of sexuality. Meanwhile, Sop`iko Čiaureli, the renowned Georgian actress, played no less than five roles, including “Sayat’-Nova as a young poet, his beloved Princess Anna, … the Nun in White Lace and the Angel of Resurrection,” the last of whom is “a pale, androgynous youth with a rooster perched on his shoulder.” This combination of roles involves both erotic and spiritual connotations, among which homosexuality as hinted from her cross-gender performance would be put aside, since it might relate to Parajanov’s own sexual orientation. The combination of roles of the lover and beloved in one actress also implies a union of the two, while the later separation of roles can be regarded as a symbol of their tragical separation. Yet Sayat’-Nova’s memory and yearning for her are ineffaceable. The vision of Anna in the outtake of Sayat’-Nova’s mystical dream and the encounter in the Convent of Saint Hr`ip`sime with the Nun in White Lace in search for a shroud for the late catholicos are both proofs of that fact. At the end of the film in the episode of Sayat’-Nova’s death, the Angel of Resurrection, whose androgyny and costume all recall the image of Dionysus, “pours a jar of wine

---

111 More commonly known in the Russian form Sofiko Chiaureli.
113 Steffen, 2013, p. 145.
114 He was trialed and convicted for homosexuality twice, though the much more dangerous second conviction is rather political oriented and the first denied by himself. In his late years he did has a gay partner Yuri Mgoyan who featured as the hero in Ashik Kerib. See: Steffen, 2013, pp. 29, 189-192, 236.
over Sayat’-Nova’s chest. The poet thrusts his chest forward as if to savor this one last experience of the worldly senses.”

In this way, the beloved paves way for the hero’s resurrection, for his immortality, and brings to an end to the love theme in the film.

In addition to the motives and motifs of the poetic school and the director's personal style, the Soviet cultural mechanism played a role in Parajanov’s principal work. Steffen correctly assessed the intertwining influence of artistic taste and the Soviet bureaucracy:

In sum, the poetic school occupied an ambivalent position within Soviet cinema. On the one hand, the value that the state placed on “national” subject matter and the relative devaluation of market considerations in a socialist system meant that these filmmakers could launch ambitious studio productions that were also personal and experimental to an extent hardly possible in the Hollywood studio system. Within the Soviet system they could even potentially muster significant resources from the state to realize them. Parajanov, for instance, was able to borrow priceless artifacts from Etchmiadzin, the seat of the Armenian Apostolic Church, in order to enhance the aura of historical and aesthetic authenticity in *The Color of Pomegranate*. On the other hand, these same filmmakers remained vulnerable, since conservative authorities might interpret their “difficult” films as contrary to the principles of Socialist Realism, and since excessive emphasis on national values and imagery risked accusations of “bourgeois nationalism”. Furthermore, unlike art cinema or avant-garde counterparts in the West, Soviet filmmakers had to contend with a bureaucratized system of production, distribution, and exhibition that was wholly controlled by the state and lacked alternative venues such as the underground samizdat press for literature. This set of underlying structural contradictions shaped the vicissitudes of Parajanov’s career to a significant extent.

In brief, *The Color of Pomegranate* is a film of paradoxes. The Soviet Armenian

---

117 Steffen, 2013, p. 22.
authorities originally aimed at an artistically superior biographical film about Sayat’-Nova and gave Parajanov resources and a fair amount of creative liberty to achieve this.\textsuperscript{118} But his personal innovative cinematography often frustrated governmental intentions. This tension invited censorship. And the approved version finally released strayed even further from historical and biographical accuracy. In the end, its depiction of Sayat’-Nova may be compared to a hook on which a coat made from the life and art of the eighteenth-century cultures of Southern Caucasia—real material fabulously embroidered with imaginative designs—has been hung with great artistry.

Section 5 Recrudescence of Nationalism in the USSR: 1970-1991

After their zenith in the 1960s, commemorations of Sayat’-Nova continued regularly. A village in the Ararat Valley was renamed after him in 1978.\textsuperscript{119} His name was identified with a crest on Mercury in 1979,\textsuperscript{120} and has become a popular symbol for Armenian artists performing in the Diaspora as well as in Armenia thanks to his increased fame in the 1960s and the intensified rapprochements between Soviet Armenia and the Diaspora. After the State Minstrel Ensemble in Yerevan, a second choir named after him was established in the Eric’ Mankanc’ Church (Church of the

\textsuperscript{118} On the details of the context of the film’s production, the production process and the censorship, see: Steffen, 2013, pp. 116-133.

\textsuperscript{119} https://hy.wikipedia.org/wiki/%D5%8D%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%A1%D5%A9-%D5%86%D5%B8%D5%BE%D5%A1_(%D4%B1%D6%80%D5%A1%D6%80%D5%A1%D5%BF%D5%AB_%D5%B4%D5%A1%D6%80%D5%A6), as retrieved on Jul. 30, 2015.

\textsuperscript{120} https://hy.wikipedia.org/wiki/%D5%8D%D5%A1%D5%B5%D5%A1%D5%A9-%D5%86%D5%B8%D5%BE%D5%A1_(%D5%AD%D5%A1%D5%BC%D5%B6%D5%A1%D6%80%D5%A1%D5%B6%D5%84%D5%A5%D6%80%D5%AF%D5%B8%D6%82%D6%80%D5%AB), http://planetarynames.wr.usgs.gov/nomenclature/SearchResults, as retrieved on Jul. 30, 2015.
Three Holy Youths) in Istanbul on April 24, 1972 for both religious and secular performances,\textsuperscript{121} while a third was founded on 1 February 1980 in Los Angeles by the Western USA Chapter of the Hamazkayin Armenian Educational and Cultural Society.\textsuperscript{122} Likewise, the Sayat-Nova Dance Company of Boston was established in 1986.\textsuperscript{123}

Most of these new honors were offered by Armenians exclusively. From the Khrushchev era on, nationalism resurfaced in the Soviet Union, which the rhetoric of “friendship among peoples” was unable to thwart until it became one of the key factors contributing to the collapse of the USSR. As noted, the gradual demise of Sayat`-Nova studies in Georgia and Azerbaijan is proof of its impact in the academic sphere.

Despite Sayat`-Nova's importance in 18th-century Georgian literature, some Georgian scholars underestimate his contribution\textsuperscript{124} and the general status of the ašik tradition in Georgian literature and even attack Paruyr Sevak’s methods in Sayat`-Nova studies. Reviewed singly, their criticism may have some merit as the ašik tradition never entered mainstream Georgian literature. Meanwhile, without fluency in Georgian, Paruyr Sevak’s study on Sayat`-Nova might need to be complemented. Yet it would be difficult to disagree with Steffen's conclusion that ethnic rivalry, or Georgian nationalism, was the real motivation behind these critiques:

\textsuperscript{121} \url{http://www.sayatnova.org/tarihi_ozgecmis.asp}, as retrieved on Sept. 2, 2015. \\
\textsuperscript{122} As retrieved from their page on Facebook: \url{https://www.facebook.com/sayatnovachoir}, Sept. 2, 2015. \\
\textsuperscript{123} \url{http://www.sayatnova.com/about_us.htm}, as retrieved on Sept. 4, 2015. \\
\textsuperscript{124} As quoted from Rayfield, 2010, p. 135.
At any rate, in case the reader has overlooked the subtext of ethnic rivalry underlying Baramidze and Arveladze’s article, they concluded: We believe that the variety of opinions about the issues discussed in this article do not stand in the way of the continuing tradition of Georgian-Armenian literary friendship. Polite academic arguments were and always are the best means to determine the truth.\textsuperscript{125}

\textit{Aşıq} studies in Azerbaijan always emphasize ethnic Azerbaijani aşıqs; collections of Armenian aşıqs songs in Azeri rarely appear side by side with Azerbaijani aşıqs’ works. The 1970s saw the only one original discussion about Sayat’-Nova by an Azerbaijani scholar.\textsuperscript{126} However, of some fifteen pages the author, Mirəli Seyidov, spent ten\textsuperscript{127} exclusively on Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri divani Shah-Khatayi songs and mainly on the origin and religious significance of this sub-genre. In the remaining pages, he discussed Sayat’-Nova’s mooted esteem for medieval Azeri poet-thinker Nəsimi,\textsuperscript{128} in connection with an alleged allusion to Nəsimi in one of Sayat’-Nova’s songs, mentioned in Baxč’inyan’s \textit{Sayat’-Nova: Life and Work}, but merely as a reference to Sayat’-Nova’s knowledge about Nəsimi.\textsuperscript{129} But here Seyidov’s claim seems based on Hasrat’yan’s edition or Armenian translation,\textsuperscript{130} while in the Azeri version edited by Baxč’inyan, the name Nəsimi did not appear at all. He discusses the parallel between Sayat’-Nova’s Azeri song No. 65 and Azerbaijani aşıq Abbas Tufarğanlı’s \textit{Bəyənməz}\textsuperscript{131}, regarding their views on social inequality (the most original

\textsuperscript{125} Steffen, 2013, pp. 220-230.
\textsuperscript{126} Mirəli Seyidov, \textit{Azərbaycan-erməni ədəbi əlaqələri (Orta əsrlər)}, Elm, Baku, 1976, pp. 162-176.
\textsuperscript{127} Seyidov, 1976, pp. 163-172.
\textsuperscript{128} Seyidov, 1976, p. 162.
\textsuperscript{129} Baxč’inyan, 1987, p. 336.
\textsuperscript{130} Seyidov’s text and footnotes are not always clear, so I cannot locate exactly which is his first source here.
\textsuperscript{131} Seyidov, 1976, p. 173.
opinion in the whole discussion), the aşul Dosti (spelled "Dostu" here) in Sayat’-Nova’s note to his songs as an “Azerbaijani aşiq”;\(^{132}\) Sayat’-Nova’s usage of Azerbaijani aşiq Saili’s refrains and rhymes (without providing the text of or even a footnote to the Ağlaram, which he claimed as Saili’s original work),\(^{133}\) Sayat’-Nova’s competence in the composition of even the most difficult aşiq genres, his familiarity with Azeri proverbs,\(^{134}\) and finally, about later Azerbaijani aşiqs’ reverence toward this Armenian master and examples of songs in praise of Sayat’-Nova among Azeri master aşiqs (for which he failed again to provide any reference).\(^{135}\) Thus the overall quality of the discussion is not very good.

By the mid-1980s Gorbachev’s policy of Glasnost lent expression to the resurgence of nationalism in Southern Caucasia, foregounding ethnic issues among the peoples of the region which found their way into academic circles, too, of which the most prominent examples include the disputes between Armenian and Azerbaijani scholars on the history of Mountainous Karabagh and Caucasian Albania.

Section 6 The Post-Soviet period (1992-)

In the last years of the Soviet Union and after its collapse, together with renewed ethnic conflicts, nationalism would only strengthen in South Caucasia. Consequently, Sayat’-Nova became even more “Armenian.” Yet that might not be purely negative,

\(^{133}\) Seyidov, 1976, p. 173. Baxç’inyan has given his retort to this claim which had been published in Russian in Yerevan, 1963; and now included in this book. See: Baxç’inyan, 1987, p. 335.
\(^{134}\) Seyidov, 1976, p. 175.
\(^{135}\) Seyidov, 1976, pp. 175-176.
since communication between the Armenian Republic and the Diaspora intensified after independence, which may have increased his fame abroad.

For example, a ballet named after him by French-Armenian choreographer Richard Mouradian was staged in France in the 1990s, based on Sergei Parajanov’s film *The Color of Pomegranate*. Similarly, from 2006 on, the Armenian General Beneficial Union (AGBU) has hosted a regular composition contest bearing his name. Restaurants commemorate him in Yerevan, Moscow, Chicago, Glendale, and even Hackensack, New Jersey.

In 2009 a new monument to Sayat`-Nova was dedicated in Tbilisi below the St. George Armenian Church where Sayat`-Nova lost his life. It is shaped like an opened roll of paper bearing a hand-written Georgian verse, perhaps from the Davt`ar. From the lower right corner, a branch of pomegranates sprouts with leaves and fruit, possibly recalling the film *The Color of Pomegranate* by the famous Tbilisi Armenian director Sergei Parajanov. A saz’s neck leans on it, while the instrument’s body extends into the lower left corner. This rather abstract monument is easy to interpret and adds to the variety of public artworks in post-independence Tbilisi, together with the T`amada (toastmaster) monument to the west, the statue of Sergei Parajanov

---

136 Details are based on email correspondence with Arcvi Baxch`inyan on July 30th 2015.
138 There used to be Sayat Nova restaurants in Lyon and Madrid; but both are reported closed on [www.yelp.com](http://www.yelp.com).
139 [http://sayat-nova.net/](http://sayat-nova.net/), as retrieved on Sept. 4th 2015. Yet there are rumors that it is permanently closed now.
emanating from a wall to the north, and the bronze saxophonist, half-emerging from a wall on Rustaveli Avenue.

A roughly contemporary monument celebrates him in Yerevan at the east end of Sayat’-Nova Avenue on the corner of Xanǰyan Avenue. The bronze bust presents Sayat’-Nova holding his kamancha, his head bent in thought. Here his contours are quite abstract in contrast to the earlier monument of 1963. The piece was commissioned by the Yerevan City Hall and the Ministry of the Diaspora and was executed by the diasporan Armenian sculptor T’oros Ţast’kelenyan.

From 2012 to 2013 a series of events was held to commemorate the three-hundredth anniversary of Sayat’-Nova’s birth. Here the power of tradition manifested itself again, since, as noted already, Sayat’-Nova’s exact birth year is disputed by scholars. Although Paruyr Sevak convincingly challenged the date of 1713 in his doctoral thesis in 1966, anniversaries continue to be calculated from that date. In 2014, the festival celebrated its own centenary as well.

As shown from news coverage, the important Vardaton/Vardoba
anniversaries in Tbilisi naturally tend to involve both Georgian and Armenian officials as an occasion for showcasing friendship between the two old Christian neighbors despite current disputes between them regarding the situation of Armenians and former Armenian properties in Georgia, Georgian churches claimed in Armenia, the alleged involvement of Armenians in the Georgian-Abkhazian war, Georgia’s close relationship with Azerbaijan and Turkey, and Armenia’s alliance with Russia. In the sphere of literary studies, publications on Sayat’-Nova continue to emerge in Georgia today. Under the increasingly tense atmosphere of cultural relationships, the Azerbaijanis, though not having directly attacked Sayat’-Nova, have long ceased publication about him, and have even began to accuse Armenians of plagiarizing the famous Azerbaijani composer Üzeyir Hacıbəyov’s melody for Sayat’-Nova’s songs.

In brief, Sayat’-Nova’s posthumous legacy could be regarded as a true reflection of prevailing trends in political thought in the history of modern Armenia and Southern Caucasia. While the introduction of nationalism into the region fueled the study, appreciation, and promotion of Sayat’-Nova through scholarly and artistic works and cultural manifestations, yet for the same reason—the importance of his identity as an ethnic Armenian—other nations display a reduced interest in his legacy, exacerbated by any discord between Armenians and other nations. Moreover, the influence of nationalism on Sayat’-Nova’s posthumous history seems set to continue for the foreseeable future, with all its positive and negative effects. However, there is

---

148 For example, *Saiat’nova*, edited, with Armenian and Azeri songs translated into Georgian, prefaced and glossary prepared by Zezva Medulaşvili, Kavkasuri Sakhli, Tbilisi, 2005.
always a wish, or a dream, too cherished to be surrendered, that as Dowsett puts at the end of the epilogue to his monograph, *Sayat`-Nova: An 18th-century Troubadour*: “If, as is devoutly to be wished for, unity is reestablished among these nations, Sayat`-Nova, who thought of himself as a builder of bridges, might well serve as patron saint.” An embodiment of this wish might be seen from the title cum symbol of a project focused on collecting music throughout the Caucasus: Sayat Nova.

---

150 I.e., the nations of the Caucasus.
Epilogue

Though certain connections with the Central Asian Turkic epic tradition or Shamanism may exist, however, as demonstrated in Chapter 2, evidence for a Central Asian origin of the Near Eastern aşık/aşul/aşıq tradition is not very convincing. The existence of various story-telling traditions in the Near East, many of which significantly predated the aşık/aşul/aşıq tradition, especially the ʿāshiq tradition among the Arabs in the early Islamic period and the difference of theme, composition, and performance between the aşık/aşul/aşıq tradition and the Central Asian epic tradition also render a Near Eastern origin more probable. It is significant that the theory of a Central Asian origin was raised no later than the 1920s, when Turanism was not contained either by Kemalism in Turkey or by Communism in the USSR. In this regard, its emergence might not be completely divorced from political concerns, which may have impinged on its scholarly quality. Similarly, the Sufi or even gusan origin of the aşık/aşul/aşıq tradition requires more detailed investigation.

Undoubtedly, the aşık/aşul/aşıq tradition is multiethnic and cross-religion. The findings of Chapters 2-5 suggest that the faultlines creating subdivisions within it fall more according to the languages in which it is performed rather than the ethnicities to which the performers belong. In this way, ethnic Armenian aşuls’ works in a Turkic language tend to be stylistically closer to the works of Turkic aşık/aşıqs than Armenian aşuls’ Armenian compositions, which applies all the more to those Armenian aşuls who converted to Islam. Consequently, the Armeno-Turkish aşul songs occupy an
intermediate spot between Muslim Turkic works and songs in Armenian, since they are written in a Turkic vernacular by authors who are Armenian Christians.

As the most accomplished early modern Armenian ašul, Sayat’-Nova surpasses other bards in the diversity of genres he practices, the superiority in the rhymes and vocal harmony he develops, the opulence, magnificence and originality of his rhetoric, and the vigor and ardor of his love, as concluded by senior scholars. In this dissertation, his rhetoric undergoes a thoroughgoing investigation. As shown in Chapter 4, the increased frequency of tropes can be regarded as a general tendency in early modern bardic literature, most obvious in bardic songs in Armenian, with Sayat’-Nova at the peak. This Armenian peculiarity is partly attributable to the influence of the more elevated Armenian lyric tradition of talasac’ut’iwn, as reviewed in Chapter 5. Apart from this, the influence of elevated poetic traditions of the area on bardic literature raised here deserves to be explored in much greater depth.

As discussed in Chapter 3, Sayat’-Nova’s Armeno-Azeri songs reveal him to be a pious Armenian Christian, quite proud of this identity, but nonetheless one who takes Islamic doctrines seriously. It is striking that his religious views do not prevent him from composing songs and paraenesis in Muslim religious traditions, betraying his powerful empathy. His broadmindedness, as shown in Chapter 6, benefitted his legacy under the mid-20th century Soviet rhetoric of “Friendship of Peoples”, but has suffered outside the Armenian sphere during periods of nationalist fervor whose scale of values is the antithesis of the bardic tradition in according the highest premium to one’s ethno-nationalist identity. Still, his multilingualism and religious broad-mindedness, plus his
sincerity in love, and his opposition to injustice, all prepare the ground for him to be the symbol of genuine interethnic harmony in the region.
Appendices

Appendix A Image of common bardic instruments mentioned in Chapter 2, as included in Garegin Levonyan: *Erker*, Haypethrat, Yerevan, 1963, p. 216:
Appendix B Three of Hrač`ya Řuxkyan’s portraits of Sayat’-Nova:

1. This chalk portrait was painted by Řuxkyan in 1945 for the 150th anniversary of Sayat’-Nova's death, as the legend states on the gallery which holds it in its collection: http://www.karllevoni.am/en/artist/hrachya-rukhkyan.html as retrieved on Dec. 21, 2015.

2. This is another version by Řuxkyan, also painted in 1945. The image is downloaded from http://www.armenianmusicarch.com/sayatnova.html as retrieved on Dec. 21, 2015.
3. This painting was completed in 1963 for the two-hundred-fiftieth anniversary Jubilee. The image is from http://www.sayat-nova.am/ as retrieved on Dec. 21, 2015, while the introduction comes from https://www.facebook.com/106421721031/photos/a.10151390677456032.1073741828.106421721031/10151684799441032/, also as retrieved on Dec. 21, 2015.
Appendix C Nalaš Yovnat’an’s miniature depicting a Majles, which includes an image of what is supposed to be an ašul playing a kamancha, as in Varag Nersisyan and Henrik Baxč`inyan ed., *Hay mįnındaryan grakanut`yan žanrer*, Haykakan SSH GA Hratarakch`ut`yun, Yerevan, 1984, the third inset between pp. 80-81:
Bibliography

1. General History of pre-modern Armenian Literature:

Abelyan, Manuk: *Hayoc` hin grakanut`ean patmut`iwn*, in 2 volumes, Haykakan SSR Gitut`yunneri Akademiayi Hratarakčˇut`yun, Yerevan, 1944–46; repr.: Meci Tann Kilikioy Kat`olikosut`iwn, Antelias, Lebanon, 2004

Baxč`inyan, Henrik: *XVII-XVIII dareri Hay grakanut`yunė*, Luys, Yerevan, 1999


Nersisyan, Varag; Baxč`inyan, Henrik; ed.: *Hay mĳnadaryan grakanut`yan žanrer*, Haykakan SSH GA Hratarakch´ut`yun, Yerevan, 1984

Sahakyan, Hasmik: *Uš mĳnadarı hay banastelcut`yunę (XVI-XVII dd.*), Haykakan SSH GA Hratarakch´ut`yun, Yerevan, 1975

2. Collections of 16-18 centuries Armenian elevated poetry:


Grigoris A. Kat`olikos Alt`amarc`i: *keank`n ew k`er´t`vacneré*, Mxit`arean Tparan, Vienna, 1958

Avgalbegyan, Mayis: *Grigor Alt`amarc`i (XVI d.): usumnasirut`yun, k`nnakan bnagrer, ev canot`agrut`yunner*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakčˇut`yun, Yerevan, 1963


PaƗtasar Dpir: *xaIer (liakatar žoƗovacu)*, Grakanut`yan ev Arvesti T`angarani Hratarakčˇut`yun, Yerevan, 2007

Doluxanyan, A.: *Nerses Mokats`i: banastelcut`yunner*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakčˇut`yun, Yerevan, 1975

Martirosyan, Artašes: *Martiros Łrimec`i: usumnasirut`yuner ev bnagrer,*
Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakę’utyun, Yerevan, 1958

Nazaryan, Šušanik: PaƗtasar Dpir: TaƗikner, Sovetakan Grof Hratarakę’utyun, Yerevan, 1958

*Petros Łap’anc’i*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakę’utyun, Yerevan, 1969

Oskanean, Hamazasp: Č’ors hay taƗasac’ner ew anonec’ talerę: Yovhannēs Karnc’i, Grigor ark’ep, Ōšakants’i, Movoše Dpir Karnc’i, ew Martiros V. Łrimec’i, Mxit’arean Tparan, Vienna, 1956

Sahakyan, Hasmik: *Eremia K´yomurč’yan*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakę’utyun, Yerevan, 1964

*Uş mijnadari hay banastelcut’yuně* (XVI-XVII dd.), in 2 volumes, Haykakan SSH GA Hratarakę’utyun, Yerevan, 1986-1987

3. Studies about Armenian aşuƗ literature:


Bayrak, Mehmet: *Alevi-Bektaşi edebiyatında Ermeni aşıkları (aşığlar)*, Öz-Ge Yayınları, Ankara, 2005

Grigoryan, ŠaviƗ: *Hayoc’ hin gusanakan ergerě*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakę’utyun, Yerevan, 1971

Levonyan, Garegin: *Hay ašuİner*, Hratarakut’iwn “Şirak” Gravačaṙanoc’i, Tparan Gēorg S. Sanoyeanc’i, Alexandrapol, 1892 (The author’s family name was still spelt as Lewonean then.)

*Ašuİnerě ev nranc` arvestě*, Hayphaltat, Yerevan, 1944

*Erker*, Hayphaltat, Yerevan, 1963

Ramazanov, Yusif: *Azerbaijan dilində yazıb-yaradan erməni aşıqları: XIX əsr*, Elm, Baku, 1976

293
4. Collections of pre-modern Armenian ašul songs:


NaƗaš Yovnat’an ašulĕ ew Yovnat’an Yovnat’anean nkarič’ĕ, Hratarakuť’iwn Tigran Khan K’elekeani, Paris, 1910

Eremean, Aram: *Ašul Lul Yovhannēs*, S. Lazar, Venice, 1929


*Parskahay ašuƗner*, Tiflis, 1930

*Parskahay ašuƗner: A. Balēr Ōlli, B. Lul Arzuni, G. Lul Sargis Šriškanc’i, D. Miskin Step’an*, Tparan Surb Amenap’rkič’ Vank’i, New Julfa, Iran, 1921

Kostaneaneç’, Karapet: *Nor ūlovacu: miǰnadarean hayoc` taƗer u otanaworner*, 4 vols., Yovhannēs Martiroseaneç’ Tparan, Tiflis, 1892-1896

Melik’set’-Bek, Levon: *Šamč’i-Melk’on ev nra hayeren xaƗerĕ*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1958

Miansareaneç’, M: *K’nar haykakan*, O.I. Bakst Print, Saint-Petersburg, 1868

Mxit’areaneç’, Aļek’sandr: *TaƗer u xalere*, Ğeorg Sanoyeaneç’ Tparan, Alexandrapol, 1900

Mnac’akanyan, Asatur; Nazaryan, Šušanik: *NaƗaš Hovnat’an: banasteɓut’yunner*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1951

Palean, Trdat episkopos: *Hay ašuƗner: ūlovrdaken hay ergič`ner ew taƗasac’k*, in 2 volumes, Mamurean Tpagrut’iwn, Smyrna, 1911-1912
5. Collections of Sayat’-Nova’s works:

Facsimile of Sayat’-Nova’s original Davt’ar:

Sayat’-Nova: Xaler: Nmanahanut’yun, Haykakan SSH GA Hratarakč’ut‘yun, Yerevan, 1963

Sayat’-Nova: Davt’ar: Nmanahanut’yun, Eliše Č’arenc’i anvan Grakanut’yan ev Arvesti T’angarani Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 2005

Modern editions:

Abrahamean, Ųrubēn: Sayat’-Novayi talerê: neracakan hōduacov, lezui usumnasirut’eamb, ba’aranov ev ayl hōduatsnerov u ditoľut’iwnnerov, šawasp T’ovmasean, Tehran, 1943

Axverdean, Šeorg: Gusank’, A: Sayeat’ Nova, Vladimir Gusti, Moscow, 1852

Araslı, Homid: Sayat-Nova, Azərbaycan Dövlət Nasıriyatı, Baku, 1963


Baramiže, Alek’sandr: Saiat’nova: K’art’uli Lek’sebi, Literaturi da Xelovneba, Tbilisi, 1963

Levonyan, Garegin: Sayat’-Nova: hayeren xaleri liakatar žoľovacu, Petakan Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1931

Hasrat’yán, Morus: Sayat’-Nova: Hayeren, vraceren, adrbejaneren xaleri
6. Books of Sayat’-Nova studies:

Albalean, Nikol: Sayat’-Novayi het (amboĺjakan erker, vol.II), Hamazgayin Tparan, Beirut, 1966

Ananyan, G. ed.: Sayat’-Novan banastelcneri ergerum, Haypethrat, Yerevan, 1963


Čanašean, Mesrop Fr.: Sayeat’-Nova: cnndeăn 250 ameakin arıt’ov, S. Lazzaro, Venice, 1963


Łanalanyan, Aram: Sayat’-Novayi steŀcagorcut’yan žolovrdakan albyurnerĕ, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakčut’yun, Yerevan, 1963

Łazaryan, Řuben: Sayat’-Nova (met’odamatenagitakan nyut’eri žolovacu), HSSH petakan gradaran, Yerevan, 1987

Harut’yunyan, Suren: Ergi hančarĕ, Sayat’-Nova, Haypethrat, Yerevan, 1963

HSSH MS Barjraguyn ev Mijnakarg Masnagitakan Krt’ut’y yan Komite; Erevani X. Abovyani anvan Haykakan Petakan Mankavarţakan Institut, Sayat’-Nova, gitakan ašxatut’yunneri žolovacu, Haykakan Petakan Mankavarţakan Instituti Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1963

K’oč’oyan, Aşot: Sayat’-Novayi hayeren xalërı bařaran, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1963

Muradyan, Paruyr: *Sayat’-Novan ūst vrac’akan albyurneri: banasirakan prptumner ev nyut’er*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1963


Sargsyan, Xoren: *Sayat’-Nova*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1963


T’ahmizean, NikoƗos: *Sayeat’-Novan ew hay gusana-ašulakan erg-eražšüt’iwnė*, Drazark Hratarakč’ut’iwn, Pasadena, CA, 1995


7. Other books about Armenian literature:


Alayan, Muşel; Talyan, Šara: *Sayat’-Nova*, Haypethrat, Yerevan, 1963


Ob Armenii i armianskoî kul’ture: stikhi, stat’i, pis’ma, Izd-vo AN Armianskoĭ SSR, Yerevan, 1963


M. Abelyani anvan Grakanut’yan Institut, Haykakan SSŘ Gitut’yunneri Akademia: *EƗiše Č’arenc’: Erkeri žoƗovacu*, in 2 volumes, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakč’ut’yun, Yerevan, 1962
8. Turkic aşık/aşıq studies and collections:

Axundov, Əhliman et al. ed. in Azerbaijani; Sakaoğlu, Saim et al. ed. in Turkish: *Azerbaycan aşıkları ve el şiiirleri*, in 2 volumes, Halk Kültürü, Istanbul, 1985-1986

Araslı, Hamid: *Aşıq yaradıcılığı*, Birleşmiş Naşriyatı, Baku, 1960


*Âşık edebiyatı araştırmaları*, Kitabevi, Istanbul, 2008

Başgöz, İlhan: *Turkish folklore and oral literature: selected essays of İlhan Başgöz*, Kemal Silay ed., Indiana University Turkish Studies, Bloomington, IN, 1998

*Hikâye: Turkish folk romance as performance art*, Indiana University Press, IN, 2008


Boratav, Pertev Naili: *Halk edebiyatı dersleri*, Uzluk Basımevi, Ankara, 1942

Boratav, Pertev Naili; Fıratlı, Halil Vedaht: *İzahlı halk şiiri antolojisi*, Maarif Matbaası, Ankara, 1968


Dadaşzadə, Araz: *Abbas Tufarğanlı: 72 şe’r*, Gencilik, Baku, 1973


Eğitim Basımevi, İstanbul, 1976

Gevherî Divânu, Ankara Üniversitesi Basımevi, Ankara, 1984

Halk edebiyatı araştırmaları, 2 vol.s, Kültür ve Türizm Bakanlığı, Ankara, 1988


Eren, Hasan: Türk sazşairler: hakkında araştırmaları, c.1, Türk Tarih Kurumu, Ankara, 1952

Ergün, Sadreddin Nüzhet: Âşık Ömer, Hayatı ve şiirleri, Semih Lüfi Matbaası ve Kitap Evi, 1936

Fındıkoğlu, Ziyaeddin Fahri: Bayburtlu Zihni : bir edebiyat sosyolojisi denemesi, Ülkü Basımevi, İstanbul, 1950

Günay, Umay: Türkiye’de Âşık tarzı şiir geleneği ve rüya motifi, 3rd ed., Akçağ, Ankara, 1999

Həkimov, Mürsəl: Aşıq sənətinin poetikası, Sədə Nəşriyyatı, Baku, 2006

İsmayılov, Hüseyin; et al.: Xəsta Qasım, Nurlan, Baku, 2010


Kaya, Doğan: Sivas’ta âşıklık geleneği ve âşık Ruhsatı, T.C. Cumhuriyet Üniversitesi Yayınları, 1994

Kaygılı, Osman Cemal: İstanbul’dan semai kahveleri ve meydan şairleri, Bürhaneddin Basımevi, İstanbul, 1937

Kazımov, Qəzənfər: Qurbani, Bakı Universiteti Nəşriyyatı, Baku, 1990

Köprülü, Fuad: Türk sazşairleri: antoloji, in 3 vol.s, Kanaat kitabevi, Istanbul, 1940-1941

Türk sazşairleri, in 5 parts, Güven Basımevi, Ankara, 1962-1965

Edebiyat araştırmaları, Türk Tarih Kurumu Basımevi, Ankara, 1966
Murat, Uraz: *Halk edebiyatı, şir ve dil örnekleri*, Sühulet Kütüphanesi, İstanbul, 1933

Namazov, Qara: *Azərbaycan aşıq sənəti*, Yazıcı, Baku, 1983

*Aşıqlar, biografiş məlumat kitabısı*, cəld 1, Səda Nəşiriyatı, Baku, 2004

Nəbiyev, Azad: *Azərbaycan xalq ədəbiyyatı*, vol. II, Elm, Baku, 2006


Özder, M. Âdil: *Doğu illerimizde aşık karşışmaları*, Emek Basımevi, Bursa, 1965


*Halk şəirə, XVIII yüzyıl*, Varlık, İstanbul, 1955

*Karacaoğlan, Bütün şəirələri*, Milliyet Yayınları, İstanbul, 1971

Qasımlı, Məhərrəm: *Ozan aşış sənəti*, Uğur, Baku, 2003

Reinhard, Ursula; Pinto, Tiago de Oliveira: *Sänger und Poeten mit der Laute: türkische aşık und ozan*, Dietrich Reimer Verlag, Berlin, 1989


9. Classical Turkish/Azeri Literature and other Turkic Literature:


*Poetry’s voice, Society’s song: Ottoman lyric poetry*, University of Washington Press, Seattle, WA, 1985


300

Doerfer, Gerhard: *Formen der ältern Türkischen Lyrik*, Studia Uralo-Altaica 37, Universitas Szegediensis de Attila József Nominata, Szeged, 1996


İsrafil, Babacan: *Klasik Türk şiirinin sonbaharı: Sebk-i Hindi (Hint üslubu)*, Akçağ Yayınları, Ankara, 2010


Azərbaycan SSR Elmlər Akademiya ed.: *Azərbaycan ədəbiyyatı tarixi, cəld. 1. İn qədim dövrən XVIII əsrin sonuna qədər*, Azərbaycan SSR Elmlər Akademiyasi Nəşriyyatı, Baku, 1960

10. Armeno-Turkic literature contacts:

Yerevanlı, Əkbər: *Erəmi-Azərbaycan şifahi xalq ədəbiyyatı əlaqələr*, Haypethrat, Yerevan, 1958

*Azərı-Erəmi ədəbi əlaqələr*, Hayastan Nəşriyyatı, Yerevan, 1968

Seyidov, Mırəli: *Azərbaycan-Erəmi ədəbi əlaqələr (Orta əsrər)*, Elm Nəşriyyatı, Baku, 1976

11. Classical Persian literature and Armeno-Iranian literature contacts:

Čʻugaszyan, Babken: *Hay-Iranakan grakan aînčʻutʻyunner, V-XVIII də*, Haykakan SSR GA Hratarakčʻutʻyun, Yerevan, 1963


Katouzian, Homa: *Sâʹdi, the poet of life, love and compassion*, Oneworld, Oxford, 2006


Tiesen, Finn: *A manual of classical Persian prosody: with chapters on Urdu, Karakhanidic, and Ottoman prosody*, Otto Harrassowitz, Wiesbaden, 1982


12. Pre-modern Georgian literature and Armeno-Georgian literature contacts:

Baramiže, Alek’sandr; Gamezardašvili, Davit’: *Georgian literature*, Tbilisi University Press, Tbilisi, 1968

Baramiže, Alek’sandr; T’op’uria, Varlaam, ed.: *Besiki: txzulebani*, Sabčot’a Mcerali, Tbilisi, 1962

Muradian, Paruyr Membrei: *Armiano-gruzinskie literaturnye vzaimootnosheniia v XVIII veke*, Izd-vo AN Armianskoĭ SSR, Yerevan, 1966


13. History of the area in the sixteenth to eighteenth centuries:


Emin, Joseph: *The life and adventures of Joseph Emin, an Armenian, written by himself*, London, 1792


*Cambridge History of Iran*, vol.6. The Timurid and Safavid periods, P. Jackson
and L. Lockhart ed.

*Cambridge History of Iran*, vol.7. From Nadir Shah to the Islamic Republic, P. Avery, G. Hambly, C. Melville ed.

*Cambridge History of Turkey*, vol. 3. The later Ottoman Empire, 1603-1839, Suraiya N. Faroqhi ed.


14. Nationalism in general, in Southern Caucasia and Soviet policies:


Mouradian, Claire: *De Stalin à Gorbatchev: histoire d’une république soviétique, l’Arménie*, Editon Ramsay, Paris, 1990


15. Other monographs concerning Armenian language, history, culture and art:

Armenian Church of North America, Western Diocese: Hawatov xostovanim= I confess with faith, prayers of St. Nersess the Graceful, Los Angeles, CA, 1966


Grišašvili, Ioseb; Bayramyan, Hrač`ya, K`aramyan, Matin trans.: Hin Tiflisi grakan Bohemé (Dzveli Tbilisis literaturuli bohema), Merani, Tbilisi, 1989


Karapetyan, Samvel: T`iflisi k`ałak`agluxnerě, as RAA Gitakan Usumnasirut`yunner, No. 5, HH GAA “Gitut`yun” Hratarakč`u’t`yun”, Yerevan, 2003

Fr. Komitas (Solomon Solomonean); Barsoumian, Vatche trans.: Komitas: essays and articles: the musicological treatises of Komitas Vardapet, Drazark Press, Pasadena, CA, 2001


Łazaryan, Manya: Hay Kerparvestē XVII-XVIII darerum: geƗankarč`u’t`yun, Haykakan SSH GA Hratarakč`u’t`yun, Yerevan, 1974

Madoyan, Gevorg: Gevorg Axverdyan, Hayastan Hratarakč`u’t`yun, Yerevan, 1969

Muradean, Hrayr: Sayeayt` Nova (kinovipak), Tparan Mšak, Beirut, 1960

Paradjanov, Sergei: Seven visions, translated from French into English by Guy Bennett; introduction, notes and commentary by Galia Ackerman, Green Integer, Copenhagen/Los Angeles, 1998

Steffen, James: *The cinema of Sergei Parajanov*, The University of Wisconsin Press, Madison, WI, 2013


Uluhogian, Gabriella: *Un`antica mappa dell’Armenia: Monasteri e santuari dal I al XVII secolo*, Longo editore Ravenna, Ravenna, 2000

16. Other Reference Books:


17. Theses and Articles:


Başgöz, İlhan: “From Gosan to Ozan”, *Turcica*, vol. 38, 2001, pp. 229-235


“Models for the interpretation of medieval Armenian poetry”, *New


Hasrat`yan, Morus: “Sayat’-Novayi davt`arê”, *Telekagir*, 10 (1963), pp. 3-32; 11 (1963), pp. 3-22

Von Haxthausen, Baron August; Taylor, John Edward trans.: “The Armenian way of life”, *Ararat*, vol. XXII, No. 4, 1982, pp. 11-12


Oldfield Senarslan, Anna: “‘It’s time to drink blood like its sherbet’: Azerbaijani women ashiks and the transformation of tradition”, *Congrès des Musiques dans le Monde d’Islam*, 2007


T`ahmizyan, Nikołos: “Sayat’-Novayi hayeren ergeri elanakneri masin”, *Telekagir*, 10 (1963), pp. 33-58
